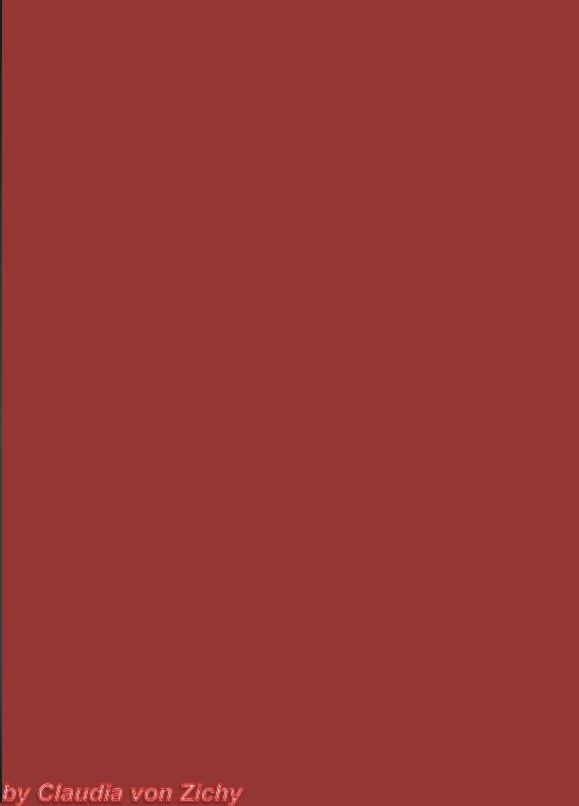




*by Claudia von Zichy*



# [MYTHOLOGY]

**The Mythology of the next generations**



## The Mythology of the next generations

*I have found something on my computer one day, so I just give it to you as it is. Enjoy.*

< According to the wishes of the Generalissimo, as he left us with the task, we time-transfer this book in this year 850 AB, when it technically became possible, back to the starting of his revolution to the person he told me to transfer it to. The warning he wrote is: *this writing is anti-liberal-democrat, anti-Semitic, politically incorrect, contains so-called genocide of billions of humans, planning and deliberately carrying out many wars, propagates female superiority and girlie-love; read only at your own risk. You have been warned.* We do not know



*the meaning of many of these, but he must have had his reason to leave this warning to be placed in the beginning of the book. He also ordered us to brief you all back there about the state of affairs of our time. Reading through this book we have to say, we are living in the aeternitatis plenty and pleasure. The economy produces everything necessary*

*for everybody; the civilization is perfected and running by the Officers' Corps smoothly, the culture is one and undivided in the whole world and only females, the perfected sex exist in the last five centuries. We have destroyed the Y chromosome; loving and cooperative society is in place. We have only one genome and the goddesses; the brain-size is 1850 cm<sup>3</sup> for long time now, which turned out to be the optimum size for the rational and the sexual pleasure. Basically everything is in the state as he dreamed out and perfected. The number of the population of 2 billion never been exceeded, the religion is the same as described in the book, and the love is overflowing amongst us. History is over for long time now, so the human side of life is flourishing. He was perfectly right to think in sub specie aeternitatis terms in case of society. That's all, folks. Now we present the book he wrote. You have to act on it back there to make it possible. Please help him and those who are fighting with him, dear girls, because you are the superior sex, the coming age will be perfect, enjoy the dream and love instead of fighting each other. We are aware that you have to have sex with men for material gain and survival. We cannot possibly know how that feels; we only know real pleasure without material strings attached. The Generalissimo passed away after a very long life. His work is the highest value anywhere, anytime, in eternity. He has created the perfection, he is the greatest figure in history; so we renamed the Constantine-Day after him, and it is the Day of the Generalissimo now. RIP.>*

(- Let's start with the meeting convened in the Castle of Buda just before the war. We write the plain facts first, and we'll have time later to discuss the theory, the reactions of the people, and so on. The very beginning of this book should be a powerful one. Who wore what kind of clothes, how they looked like, these are the rubbish written when the writer has nothing to offer, or has got so tired that his brain cannot imagine anything constructive. So cut the crap and tell it straight what happened at the historical meeting in the Castle just before the war. No need for the description of the walls, the weather, and other usual boring things. We are writing mythology now. We can start it anywhere, and finish it anywhere, and at the end it will come together anyway. For this they have to read through this book. We can mention that this is not the usual "good guys win at the end book" or rather the good guy is different from the brainless liberal democrat, the politically correct stupid guy. So no need to wait for some hero Saviour, who restores the peace, saves the world for democracy ever. This is a whole different book with deep and unusual thoughts; at least for those who able to think.

- OK. The leaders of some of the Eastern-European countries got together for a final meeting to discuss the war soon to be started in the region. Yes, it will be a good starting point. As Schelling once said, the mythology is timeless. I directed that part of the world then, and I called the meeting to Buda. The leaders or dictators of all the surrounding and nearby countries were present to start a war against each other; a mutual signing of the declaration of war.

- OK. Now we are talking. Go ahead.)

- Poland, an approximation, if you please. How many deaths are you going to have?
- About 2 million, maybe 3. Let's put it to 2 and a half. It is very conservative estimation I think. We have too many cockroaches, in the first round, given the time limit, 2 or 3.
- The Ukraine is about the same. Rather 3 million. I could give you the exact number after the war, but then it'll have not much of a use, will it? We are infested in many ways.
- Exactly, mister President. We need the numbers before we start the war, for planning and logistics. Later it becomes obsolete anyway. I'm sensing you don't take it seriously enough. The genius is in the details, gentlemen, this is no game to lose or win. We have to win it, no other choice is permitted. One little detail goes wrong, the whole process goes wrong, and we all will become convicts. The victors have never ever been questioned, nor taken to The Hague to stand trial. The present situation looks good however, every detail has been worked out and tried, but nonetheless we have to be cautious. The enemy is out there, watching us.
- General, just read out the numbers as they are. No need for too precise headcount. A little joke never hurts. Everything is in order. We know the numbers. The magnitude is what really matters. This is the first round anyway. Later we can do some more selective measures after the war, between us. We're going to do the fine tuning after we get rid of the obvious trash.
- Yes, Sir. Poland 2.5 million, Ukraine 3 million, Romania 3 million, Bulgaria 2 million, Serbia 2 million, Slovakia 1 million, Czech Republic 1 million, Croatia 1 million, Moldavia 1 million, Belarus 2 million, Montenegro half million, Macedonia half million, Slovenia 200 thousand, Hungary 2 million, altogether about 20-21 million casualties in the region just for now. We can do this much in the time-frame allowed for us for sure.

- Thank you, General. Now, gentlemen, if you please, sign the documents placed in front of you... Thank you. With this, you signed your names into history. In two days' time the war will start. The most unusual and most perfect war is about to be launched in the history of mankind. Lay back and enjoy. Do not interfere with my General Staff. Today you'll all go home. Day after tomorrow the now signed declarations of war will be sent to each other. Everyone will be in war with everyone else. The UN, the NATO will be asked not to interfere. It is time we make history, instead of just suffering history ourselves. The French Revolution, the Russian Revolution, Hitler's revolution and everything else in the history of mankind will be no more concern to anyone, compared with our war. We do not stop half-way like they did. Thank you, gentlemen, you may return to your countries now. Everything is taken care of. Finally we are at the stage of reality. In the liberal democracies there is such a thing as manifold truth. Everybody can have his own truth, and it is even accepted by those who are in charge or supposed to be in charge of the philosophical thinking and the truism. The manifold truth of course is the manifestation of the inanity of the mind at work; it is some kind of camouflage of the not-knowing. It permits everybody to start from his own little ideas as premises and to use all kinds of senseless logic to defend what he decided beforehand. The end needs to be explained by inventing absurdities. They call it the democratic diversity of culture and thinking, and they even praise this idiocy. The fallacy of the causality and the many-truth allowing thinking of the societies resulted in chaos in the heads and in chaos in the practical matters; like the economy and the mixing of the cultures, and the more and more backwardness of the society. The little every-day people have their own little truth, they say, but those half-truths are always false in reality. They're just unable to think more than one step ahead. They are happy with that, like the children. The premises, on which those truths built upon, are false, the logic they use is false, and so the results always end up in chaos and wrong-doing as we can see. The death of the society is the sure result of the acceptance of the so-called neoliberal democratic values. There are no such values. This coming war is the first step to create the society of the truth and real values. Thank you all for signing the waging of war on the idiotic theories, and now we are ready to act and make the society as it should have been made long time ago. The war is on, comrades. It will be fun to fight this strange war of us. The main thing is, the future justifies our war. So the end justifies the means.

- Well, you might justify what we have to do. For me it is enough that something happens finally in this region of the world. We were handled by every western country as some backward place. Now we're going to show them something. Old virtues die hard. We are doing their society a great favour as well, even if they aren't aware of it just now.

- The point is we are full of idiots and lowly races. A good first round cleansing is needed badly. It is up to us now. I personally shot that coward president of ours the EU forced on us. I want to see the end of my work, so do my soldiers. We're ready to fight. The moral is good, at high standard, and this is the 24<sup>th</sup> hour. I don't think there will be another possibility for us.

- Yes, me too. We might be against the West, but we rather die standing than live on our knees like we have done it so far. We are ready for the westerners if they brave to interact.

- OK, my friend, let's do it right. We have the plans; it is the work of the genius. How stupid we were to compete with each other. The west just played us like a piano. They say a great leader will manifest him whenever it is necessary. Now is the time and here is the man. We're ready to follow you. You have showed the way and proved the way. We'll fight.

- Telling you the truth, you cannot do otherwise. Every state here is overloaded with debts from the West, and that debt cannot be paid back unless we start this war and unite our power for one. The other reason is that sooner or later we all will be charged with some idiotic crime against humanity by the western standard as I said. Of course these are not the real reason for the war; these are just secondary, miscellaneous things. We borrowed for the smooth running of the war and not the other way around. So we do not wage this war to avoid back-payment and the responsibility of the so called war-crimes. Trust the plan, gentlemen, and we will be heroes instead of criminals. The justification of the war is the role of the victor in history.

- Thank you, General. My friends, we are ready to make history and win it. OK, let's do it. Practice finally, instead of the stupid ideology. You cannot even imagine how far we will go from this miserable present state of affairs of ours. Just bear with me, we're destined to lead the world even if you cannot imagine it just now. I can, and that is good enough for now.

It was the works of many years' meetings and bribing and extortion and assassinations, before this signings of the documents concluded. It was he, himself alone, who made it possible. In two days the signing countries will send the declarations of war to each other. The most interesting war in history will be fought. About 20 million people will finish his life during this progress. It is time for the scum of the Earth to die out. Now they'll do it only in this region, but later the whole Earth will be cleaned up in the progression. Eastern-Europe became so infected with the lowest kind of humans, that it was impossible to have developed economy and to live decent life here anymore. The centuries bred this lowly people without brain, unable to achieve anything except robbery, theft, killing and cheating on others and each other. The lowliest of the Earth will die out. For this, the war is necessary. From this war in this region surely will emerge a new mankind, and a new kind of ideology and politics. The left-winger liberal democratic theories poisoned the brains and body; overpopulated the planet with the inferior races. Gypsies, Negroes, Arabs, Chinese, yellow, red, black, and some white trash too. In the signatory countries at least 25% useless rubbish people accumulated by the liberal democrats, by their theories about the egalitarianism, everybody is equal with everybody else; the human life is value by itself, and other stupidities. Now they are going to see if behind those values something is real or not. Two days, and the great Eastern-European war begins. 20 million human trashes will die. The total darkness will last for about two months. This is the time limit set by the western liberal democratic bureaucratic mind. Within this time period they cannot think and act. They will be confused. They will counsel and look for advice from each other, but do nothing. They are basically imprudent. They are elected by the same stupid people everywhere, the average, the blunt, the lazy, and the mindless. They are about the same as those who elected them. When and if they finally come close to apprehending that some hazy things are in progress, everything lights up for them to see, and comes the next surprise, which they cannot handle again and forget the first inquiry. When the rational brain takes over the task from the mindless bureaucrats and leftist liberal democrats, real progress can be made. The confusion will be total in the foreign countries.

Two days later the declarations of war have been sent by the countries of the region to each other. The foreigners have been warned to leave the countries. Whoever has stayed, has done so at own risk, giving up his right to be treated as foreigner. The media have been suppressed.

The TV, the mobile phones, the internet, everything has been shut down, immobilised. Dictatorship has been declared. The military was the only authority. Mobilisation of the selected masses was in progress. Well before this conscription the real military forces were ordered to fill up their ranks and were trained like never before in every signatory country. They were placed just behind the frontlines. The hordes of unwanted people were transported to the borders everywhere to the military zones set up well before. The ambassadors asked for an explanation. None was given and they were politely refused to be received. They had not the slightest idea what is going on. On the second day of the declaration of the war the unskilled, yet untrained military forces started to arrive to their military stations at the borders for drilling and training. In the evenings some strange cloud descended on them. All died. It went on for days and weeks on all sides. In the meantime some real shooting was staged also, had to do it for the show with tanks, big guns, everything a war supposed to have. Good training for the real soldiers, they were trigger-happy for long now. Some unwanted had to die like there was a war going on. It was orchestrated well, so looked real enough if some may watch. Inside of the countries special sanitation forces gave everybody a serum against some disease. Not everybody received it. To some of them other kind of medicine was given. They died in two days without any pain. They were the women of the scum, the elderly and the children of that strange race, unwanted by the new world order. Some drug-addicts, many felons in the prisons of which 80% were gypsies, the mentally retarded and the very old have also been given the lethal shots. In this situation there is no moral override. Morality has its own laws too. And the first law is to kill the poison; the poison in this case being the people of the inferior races and mental state. Life itself has no value. It has been misstated before, and now is the time for the revision of those stupid ideas in practice. The “value for itself” hypothesis has its own self-contradiction, besides it is illogical and completely contradicts the idea of nature, the laws of nature and the right and adequate working of nature. The value should be connected to some system, not to stand alone. Later we'll discuss it in detail.

- Sir, here is your uniform. The rank is Marshal, as you ordered.
- Thank you, General. You take the rank of Colonel General, and you become the Commanding General of the Armies of all sides. Somebody has to take full control of the situation. We have about 2 months, but I would like to finish this whole business in 6 or 7 weeks. To produce and bury 20 million dead is no small task. How many dead by now?
- About 5 or 10 thousand in every front-zone in every country every day, of course depends on which frontline. Felix is doing his best. We have enough VX for the task from the Russians. We are at the beginning. Don't worry, Sir, everything is handled by very well trained, knowledgeable people. The plan was worked out and ready in the last 6 months. No problems detected, and none will occur. This is a war-situation; the scums are also citizens of the countries, so it is the duty of every citizen to defend the homeland from the enemy in case of war. As to the plaque in the back-country, well, some vaccines can go bad sometimes. If everybody is equal to everybody else, then I don't see any problem if the brown people die out only besides some felons and idiots. The airspace is covered. For communication we are using the military technology of the nineteen-sixties. Landline cable, old military phones cannot be spied on. This is unbeatable. The western powers are trying to solve the code. There are no codes. Because in the meantime we're flooding them with false signals to work on. I wonder

if they can decode the Bible for one. The CIA-guys will go crazy, together with all other spying agencies of the West. They will send agents; we are ready to catch them. They will be guests of the state. Good for negotiations later. We might turn them as well to work for us.

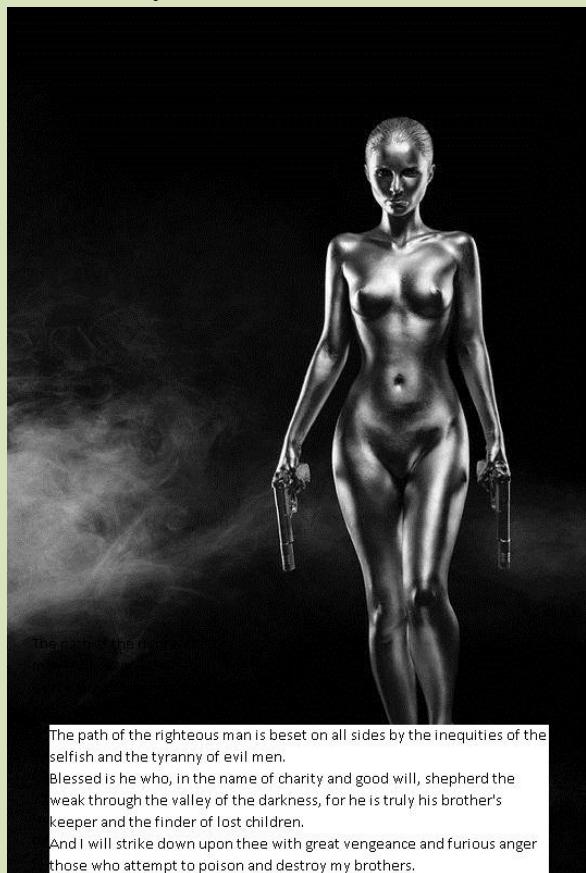
- Yes, it was a real genius to find a solution for the communication. We are in complete darkness. No spying, no codes to break, no information going out. Everybody must be shot at the scene if he is even trying to communicate or record anything at the frontline. Their satellites are blocked, using the latest Russian military technology. All right, General, go and take over the coordination of the whole operation in every country. Finish it as soon as possible. No trace of the dead bodies should be detected later. And General, select 5 officers for me during the war. They are your responsibility. I want the very best.

How idiotic was the doctrine of the equality. The meek will inherit the Earth? No fucking way. The supermen will inherit the Earth. These leftish liberal shitheads directly mixed the races in the name of non-existent equality. Even they couldn't understand and follow up logically their own ideas. Originally it meant to be colour-blindness. But that didn't satisfy their mental hunger for the creation of some undetermined race, so they started to mix the races, although it was positive discrimination, because it is not colour-blindness anymore. They made those Hollywood-movies by the thousands, where every race had to be represented, and the white man was graded the lowest in those movies. They're still making the trashy movies. Not here, not any more. They won't find an actor to play coloured guy or gal when this war is really over. 6 or 8 weeks it will take to kill off the gypsies, the very worst of humanity poisoning Eastern-Europe and the whole world, the drug-addicts, the felons and the very old. Later the fine tunes can be perfected. Now merely the rough work is there to do. This part of the planet will be young and full of good energy. The people will have something to live for. Taxation and prying into their life and monetary affairs was the biggest concern of the government before he took the power from the undereducated, dull, narrow-minded elected politicians. Now it will be all different. The high politics will be different. We'll have some presentation of it after the war. It is too bad that it has to be done the short-cut way. He presented the IQ-selective method in the beginning for reducing the multiplication of those who have no intelligence whatsoever, under the IQ 90. The liberal democrats couldn't handle it, didn't want to hear about it. In their narrow mind every human being is the same. Besides, it would've taken too much time, and he had no time to wait decades for the result. So now, thanks for the liberals, the shorter method is in effect. Humanity will thank the equalizers for the more effective method applied. Well, it is their fault. They always screwed up everything they touched mentally or politically, so now they are going to get it big time. The leftish liberal democrats will be eliminated once and for all too. There were other political reasons to wage war, which had to be done anyway, so now it is two problems handled and solved at once. The death of a few people is tragedy; the death of millions of people is statistic. Well said, Comrade Stalin, but you screwed it big time, killing the thinkers. We do it right now.

In the sixth week the death rate has been reached. Two more weeks needed for eliminating the traces of the bodies. Pigs and chickens are very effective for that end, dog-food can be made fast, so finally they'll have some use after all. At the frontline they have to be ground, so the transportation of meat won't arouse attention like so many bodies. Their miserable

ghettos were and will be bulldozed continuously like it never existed. The real armies shot everyone who by some miracle escaped the VX clouds. They were all white boys, the real army. They loved their job. They hated gypsies like every normal-thinking human did. The gypsies weren't even human, rats only, fucking plague or virus of mankind. The medical envoys have done their job exceptionally well. Recognize and destroy. There were some incidents, but basically all over the territory everything was done in orderly manner. The human spirit finally found the way out of the slavery of the mind. Everyone was soldier first, so the Citizens' Garde helped all the way, happily. At the eighth week the darkness has lifted, the TV, the phone networks, the internet was just like before, and cease-fire has been declared between the countries at war. The satellites of the western powers were not interfered with any longer, and everyone could see whatever was there to see. After the declaration of the cease-fire a conference was summoned in Budapest to unite the countries in a new block or alliance, the Confederacy. The Colonel General advanced to five stars, or General of the Armies. He has done a great job in the organization and in keeping the moral of the troops high.

(- OK, this is not enough. It won't suffice for anyone. Could we just stay a little longer in the war, and say a little more about it? None believes that it could have been done so smoothly.



- Well, we could detail it more, but no point doing so. That war was the beginning of the new politics, and later we will return somehow to that point. Remember, we are writing a mythology, and the time is unimportant. What we are doing first, we arouse the attention of the reader. *My final goal was the creation of the perfect society, and this is the red line which goes through these pages. To make everybody understand that there is such a thing as perfection, and this perfection can be achieved, and has been achieved. The way and the happenings through which it has been accomplished are particular or accidental; could have happened some other way, but the target had been set.* So just keep up with me now, and I promise, everybody will understand later everything. OK? Good. So just listen. The war was easy; the getting there was very hard. Activation energy needed first.

- That was the age when the Angel of Death had her way big time. Here she is with that quote from a movie. Basically, if I understand right, the war eliminated the lowliest people, gave the opportunity to get out of every bureaucratic alliance for the signatory countries, and by ending the war, you could create the Confederation. It means it was absolutely necessary to achieve many goals in one procedure.)

After the war in the same Castle of Buda the warring countries convened in front of the media and the diplomats of the foreign countries to sign the peace and establish a new, strong political alliance. Everyone was invited; many have voyaged just to witness the ceremony. The Marshal presided over, led and navigated the proceedings.

- Gentlemen, Presidents of your countries, I declare the High Authorities of the countries are present, and they have the authorization and the full power to negotiate and sign any document they please. We proceed step by step now, so even the foreigners can follow.

First point is the signing of the peace.

In front of everybody there is a document to sign, declaring everlasting peace between our countries. Gentlemen, if you please, sign that now, so we can continue with our second point... Thank you. Peace has been declared and signed. We are not enemies, but friends.

Second point, the formation of the Confederation.

The Presidents of the signatory countries have decided to unite their countries in a confederacy, namely the Eastern-European Confederation. Signing the respective documents, the countries will unite their military power, their financial power and their foreign affairs, and delegate those powers to the High Council of the Confederation. The High Council has the right to decide on any particular questions it wants, on those which cannot be seen in advance. We are going to have one army, one financial centre with one kind of money for the whole Confederacy, and one Foreign Affairs Department. The borders of the countries inside the Confederation will be decided as the matter of the interior. The documents are in front of you, gentlemen, please sign those now... Thank you. The Confederation has just been successfully established. With this we have signed the unification of this part of the world finally after so many centuries of feuding and disagreement. No more of that, we all belong to one political power as it should have been done long ago. We have just corrected the mistakes of the past.

Third point is to choose the Commanding General of the united armed forces.

We have to appoint the Commander in Chief of the Army. The names of the possible appointees are in front of you. I suggest the first name on the list. Seconds? 10. Thank you. Against? None. The General is the new Commander of the Armed Forces of the Confederation with the rank of the General of the Armies. His only superior in rank is the President Marshal.

Fourth point is to introduce the new monetary system in the Confederation.

From tomorrow on the Confederation will have the first scientific monetary system in the history of mankind; the present monies will be changed within a reasonable time according to the published exchange rates; the Confederation is not responsible for the debts of the signatory countries. We start our economic life anew. All debts of the State are null and void. We'll have one financial centre and one kind of money. It is the responsibility of the High Council to oversee the issuing the currency with permanent purchasing power. For this end the Statistical Bureau of the monetary affairs has to be established, responsible to keep the purchasing power of money permanent. Sign the document right in front of you... Done.

Fifth point is the establishment of the foreign-affairs political body of the Confederation.

The Foreign Affairs Department of the Council of the Confederation is in charge of the foreign affairs of the signatory States, and it will be seated in Buda, in this Castle. Sign the documents in front of you. With this signing the foreign Embassies will have to come to Buda-

pest; only consulates are permitted in the capital cities of the signatory countries. The Council takes over the Embassies and Consulates of the signatory countries all over the world. Done. Sixth point is for electing the President of the High Council of the Confederation.

The members of the Council of the Confederation are the Presidents of the signatory countries present. Now we'll elect a President for the High Council of the Confederation. We do it by a secret vote. A paper is placed in front of you. Please write one name on it... Thank you. Colonel, please collect the votes. Name the person elected.

- It is you, Sir, unanimously voted.

- Thank you for the trust, gentlemen. The High Council is the highest authorised decision-making body when in session; unites the law-making, the government, and the highest forum in justice. Politics is one and undivided. The President has the same power when the Council is not in session, and has the right to veto when in session. The business in hand has been successfully carried out. If any one of the signatory countries wants to express any kind of pressure from any source to sign these documents, say it now... Nobody. We declare that we have signed every piece of document freely, and everything we have signed is the wish of the people we represent. Objection? None. This session is adjourned. See you in the party this evening. You have made history, gentlemen. The presidents and ambassadors of the foreign states are invited to the party. If you have any questions, please do not hesitate to ask, there.

(- Time out, please. Who is going to believe that those presidents gave you the dictatorial power? I am very positive that something was going on in the background. Am I right? The Presidents of those countries weren't the brightest class of people. I am very fortunate, because I do not know anybody, who is stupid. But you had lots of them to deal with. So what was really going on?

- Well, Felix was the real power behind the scene. The families of the presidents had been kept under very close surveillance, and if any one of them didn't sign the papers, the family would have suffered death immediately. And I made sure they knew about it. This is the language they surely understood. But I think now that they would have signed those documents anyway. Alone they would be too weak to hold on to the power acquired in both sense; personally and the country as well. It was just some extra insurance. Felix had a very capable force, and he became the Chief of the State Security Department of the Confederation or SD as we called that power. But let's go back to the business in hand, if you don't mind.)

- General, my congratulations for the appointment. Not that it is something we didn't know beforehand. Do you have your chosen officers somewhere around? OK. Send them to my office. How strong are we militarily? What is the strength of the armies of the Confederation?

- 120 divisions are standing, and the same number can be raised immediately if necessary. Fully armed, very well trained. The West might be curious why do we start a new development of the armed forces after the war, but they were so stupid so far that it won't be a difficult matter to explain. The dossiers of the selected 5 officers are on your desk, Sir. The Colonels will be there momentarily. Sir, good to know that everything goes according to the plan. We've started the revision and shifting of the old country-borders here and there. It is not included in any agreement we publish. It is the problem of the Confederation.

- Good. That is necessary for the hiding of the missing 20 million. We can shift the numbers any way we please. But I don't think anybody will be in the position to question us. It is the matter of power only. See you at the party, General. That's the place to practice high politics.

In his office he found the dossiers of the selected five officers. Very precisely worded, clear language; this is the beginning of a new era. The Colonels have gone through various testing, including but not limited to IQ-test, concentration in diverse environment, and so on. They had to read a text about some scientific problem while the radio and television was on, and had to tell their life-story in the same time. Then some girls came to the room, undressed, and left the room. The selected 5 had to recall the topic on the radio and television, had to remember which girl had what kind of clothes on, how they looked like naked, and had to recall the treatise they read during the storytelling. They all are fluent in at least four languages, they have very high IQ, and all of them have some specialty and degree besides the military education. They are the leaders of the future. In time they will be eligible; the sooner better.

(- OK, time out again. Did you have bodyguards at that time?

- There was a Master-sergeant with me as personal guard and chauffeur, and others, I rarely saw. If there were some, they were invisible almost. This Master-sergeant was an old comrade of mine, and his word was like the word of God for the personal staff. He never wanted any higher rank; he said he is happy with this one and wanted to stay with me as body-guard. Nevertheless, he had much more power than his rank implied. He had license to kill, for example, without explanation. Felix also had many shadows on me. So, yes, I think I was well-protected, if that was the question.



- Some early age of knights that was, I imagine. Yes, that was the question. OK, back to the colonels. So you called them in one by one?

- No, I called them all in together. There was no time, I trusted the General, and it was better, if they knew each other, too. But let me continue the story.)

- Gentlemen, you are Colonels of the Hungarian Army now. Presently, as we're speaking here, the swearing in is in progress in every country's army for the High Council of the Confederation. There will be no national armies anywhere, only Citizens' Garde, under the authority of the Army. Our horizon just grew wider, and for this we need a new officer class for the Army of the Confederation. Your dossiers are on the desk. Everybody will read his own and everybody else's profile. You have half an hour. Then I'll be back, and I'll ask you to brief me about your views on the future of the Confederation. Only couple of sentences needed for answer. There is a party, the first party of the many more to come, and it will start in 3 hours, and so be quick. I want straight and honest answers for the question I didn't even ask. There are no wrong answers, because it is a fluid state now. I do not need admirers. I need co-

workers and thinkers of and in details. You have 30 minutes to impress me by some specialty you have. I want to know in which field you can help me most to forward our development.

(- And you went to your harem to have sex with some ladies?

- No, not that time. That was much later in time. I was hungry. At the parties I never ate anything, because if you do so, you could look like an idiot. When you eat publicly you always make some kind of a blunder, and that error will be noticed. I only drank at the parties, and I ate before the parties. We never had dinner-parties; the food was there for everybody like a Swedish-table with waiters; this way everybody could talk to whoever he wanted. Also, I had to send a message to Felix, and I told his liaison officer that I want to see his boss. Nobody knew where he was at any given moment, but he had many affairs to run simultaneously, for example the production of the viruses and bacteria. Now, let's go back to the Colonels.)

- Well, gentlemen, any ideas about the current state of affairs?

- Sir, the Confederation cannot be a final form. We have to follow through the permanent revolution, the line of Trockij if you like, because if we start the consolidation at this point, we end up like the Soviet Union, in disaster. They backed off, consolidated at one stage, and that was the end of them. They let themselves be involved in the Red Queen game, played that big time, which is a losing competition for every participating side. We should never get involved in that no-win contest. What you need among others, are military diplomats to pave the conquering further, to expand. The Confederation is an open organization; any other state we invite can join. It is a temporary frame. We have to expand and we never stop expanding.

- Sir, the Russians are needed. We are between the West and the Russians. There is no way to survive alone. So I suggest the Russian Bear as an ally or even closer friend. Together we become an unmatched military power. Diplomacy without military power behind it is just empty talk. We have to have the greatest military power on Earth, so none can question us. We also need the whole energy-production of the Earth and the brainpower of the West. We need to conquer diplomatically or militarily or both. I am for strong army-backed power-politics.

- Sir, the West can be neutralised temporarily or for long time. I don't think anyone understood that half-sentence in the documents of the Confederation, which states that we are not responsible for the debt of the signatory states accumulated before and during the war. But very soon they will discover that all-important declaration. This will break the West, unless we'll come to the rescue. And I have a good idea how to do it. In the process we can demilitarize the West, and make their industrial might work for us. In the same time we chain them down right alongside us for decades, or melt some them into the Confederation soon.

- The USA is in trouble many ways, and trying to compensate for the internal sickness by going international. They can be steered back to the Monroe-doctrine, so they'll leave us alone, especially if Russia will be our ally. Together we are too much for them, but no need to become the enemy of the USA. We can work together. We have to redirect their thinking from the idiotic liberal democracy to the new philosophy. I've studied and graduated in West Point among other universities. I know the mind of the officers' class. They are surely WASP, not liberal democrats, and aren't too happy with the present interior situation. There

is no example in the USA for military take-over of the state, but there is a possibility, legally; would be worth exploring that way. There is always a first time for everything.

- Sir, what you really need beside all that, is a new system of logistics throughout the Confederation. The same system needed in place everywhere. The second nature, as Schelling defined it. We use the causal mind to forward the teleological. The scientific design needed from the top down to the remotest villages so to speak. The human errors can be eliminated almost completely. Implant hardware in the whole region and write good programs. I can do that. The specialists of every field can do the rest operating it military style, effectively.

- OK, gentlemen. The General has chosen the cream of the crème, I trust his judgement, and you impressed me. You're right in most everything. All of you are my Presidential aides for now. You are going to work out the details. I see the big picture, and I need officers to think and carry out the particulars. You will have a staff of your own; you choose the best specialists, and they're your responsibility. I want the plans instilled to practice. The building of the Parliament is yours, big enough, empty, so divide it amongst you. At least for that edifice we have some good use finally. You may choose some other state-buildings too, if you like. You all sign the oath for the Council, now. You, Colonel, have studied at the Military Academy in Moscow. Have you acquired some friends there? Russian friends I mean, in high position.

- Yes, Sir. One of them is the nephew of the President of Russia. He is a Major General. Since the President has no son of his own, he is like a son for him. He is very smart, very ambitious and very able soldier and leader, a real doer.

- All right. By the recommendation of the General of the Armies, you, gentlemen have advanced to the rank of General, one star. Your uniforms have been delivered to your living quarters already. Be at the party in your new attire. Here are your documents, new ID-s. Congratulations, Generals of the Confederation. You are dismissed. You, General, go to the airport to greet and pick up the President of Russia and his nephew. Yeah, we have researched a little beforehand. They'll arrive in one hour time. Convey my apologies that I cannot be present at their reception personally. Take a helicopter for them, that's better than the carpool.

On that day and night Budapest was the middle of the World. Every state has delegated some high officials, or the heads of the states were present. The protocol was very busy. The hotels were all reserved for and occupied by them. The whole city was lighted up and delighted. The airplanes were landing one after another, carrying heads of states, presidents of countries, teams of high officials and diplomats. The military colour-guard was replaced many times. Everybody was extremely busy. Felix walked into the office and sat down. Most parts of his organization didn't exist officially. He was doing his main business in the shadow. Much more effective than a bureaucratic institution would be with piles of paperwork, and he was very effective in everything he did with the help of his international recruits.

- Here are the possibilities. A mild contamination through the Globe, and in one place it becomes wild and deadly. Or it becomes wild and deadly in many places, so the real target will appear as one of the many. Or we can do it specifically in one place. But that could raise some strange questions we may want to avoid. There is no cure, only we'll have the serum.

- Let's do the second variant. Begin here, in this area, and can be deadly here and everywhere in this area. Then in a roundabout way arrives here, but then the total depredation won't be

anything special. Let the commandos carry the vaccine. It would be a good idea if you closely cooperated with the Commandant of the Special Forces. We need the documents signed by the heads of the states before they die. Better if they don't die, so the boys can get them out, and it looks better for the other leaders as well. We'll put them in to some luxury palace somewhere for a while for everyone to see. When can we start the operation?

- One month, maybe less. I will call in time. By the way, we'll have enough money for the West. We are going to pay them with their own money. Everything is under control. I need some of the Embassies and Consulates of the signatory countries all over the world. Those buildings are empty, but still ours, our territory, and enjoying diplomatic status. Some janitors are necessary to maintain those, like gardeners and other staff. I staff those all right.

- Fine, you can have them. Select whichever you want. And nothing can be traced back here. All right, you have the green light. You cannot be questioned by anyone, except me.

(- Where did he get the money from? Was that his real name?

- Drugs, playing the stock-market, and I mean really playing it big-scale. With the boys he had, he could do whatever he wanted. Some Swiss bankers were in the team too. They artificially lowered the values of some stocks by many different methods, and then they bought in and the stocks skyrocketed again. Many major factories suffered their treatment. At that time one pessimistic forecast from the CEO ruined the stock-prices, and he kindly made them announce some. But the drug-business was the first he took over. Killed the big dealers, or they worked for him. Basically he controlled the drug business of the world; if not by that time, then in the very near future, but he controlled it. The main thing is, in time we had enough money to pay the West, he had enough to finance his organization, and our Central Bank was full with foreign money. Who could ask for anything more? No, his real name was different. But we named him long ago after Dzerzhinsky, the KGB founder. Let's go back to the party.)

The Castle of Buda has been reconstructed, and was beautiful. That was his residence, his office and his living quarter was there too. The Castle was the seat of governmental power of the Confederation. That night the whole World was there. The Ceremonial Hall was filled with Heads of States. Other saloons were open too. The new block of power, the Confederation attracted attention from every corner of the World. The Chinese wanted to do business, the USA lost many allies by the formation of the Confederation, and lost power in the region, the Russians had their own concern, the South-Americans have been invited just like every state. That was the time of the great expectations from every corner of the World. It was like a new kid in the block. A very strong new kid, which had to be recognized internationally.

- General, where do we start? The West has finally realized that the business is not as great as they expected it will be. They worry themselves to death by now. You said you have solution for the problem. Well, think it over before we present it to them. Some information for you: we will have enough of their money, so calculate with that. You, General, come with me, we are going to have a little chat with the President of the good old US of A. First we finish off the leader of the pack and later we deal with his followers. America likes to be the leader. We have to demolish that ambition ruthlessly. I don't want any kind of competition here. Come, General, you're supposed to be an expert in America.

- Mister President, I am very glad to see you here. We are very far from your country, and you have taken all the trouble to come personally. It's a great pleasure to entertain you here.
- Thank you, Mr President, it is nice to be had. The ceremony really was properly orchestrated. Can you explain the purpose of this new political block? And would you explain that war, and the stalling of our satellites, and denying us information? Affairs like these interest me.
- General, am I too sensitive, or my English has some defect? It seems to me, that the leader of the free world is questioning our liberty to form any kind of alliance or league we want. Am I wrong, General? No, I don't think so. If my knowledge in history is right, the USA had come to existence the same way, forming an alliance, and that was illegal at that time. The thirteen colonies were the territory of England back then. We have formed this Confederation freely, openly and democratically for everyone to see. None of the forging countries were under the power or authority of another state. How is it the business of the USA, General?
- Sir, with all due respect, America likes to tell everybody what to do, and how to do it. Well, they always fail to accomplish anything, but time after time they continue to play their failing game nonetheless. I think the President only expressed himself quite harshly. It could be attributed to the jet-log. I think he just would like to have some information about this perfectly legitimate open formation, our Confederation. Even the USA can join if wishes to advance.
- Mr President, you mean to say that your highly valued CIA and the 16 other intelligence services you have couldn't supply you with enough information? Then something must be wrong with them. I would fire the chief of your spies if I were you. Too much bureaucracy and paperwork ends up in no result, yes, it's bad. Sorry, what was your concern again?
- Mister President, you and every other Head of State denied our Ambassadors even one reception. We didn't understand anything, and we didn't know what was happening here. Also, you forgot to ask us for an endorsement to form this Confederation. You have weakened the NATO, too. You all, mingled with the interest of America. We want an explanation.
- I'm just having a flashback. One of the great movies Hollywood has made. Maybe somebody here, Ladies and Gentlemen recall the title of that movie. The guy in it reminded the others that they are Americans, and asked if the others knew what it really means. He said it means that their great ancestors were thrown out of every decent country of Europe. Well, this flashback is just on the side of course. The main problem is different now. You don't really suffer only from the jet-log, Mr President. You suffer from loss of power. America likes to know everything, control everything, and makes a mess everywhere, always. This Confederation does not and will not recognize any power over itself. We don't have to explain anything to anybody. We are free, and we will remain free at any cost, and I really mean the any cost. We were here long before America was even discovered. General, how long it is that this Castle has been standing here? It is quite a long time as I recall from my history classes.
- Well, Sir, by the time that Italian discovered the New World, this Castle had celebrated her 300 years anniversary, give or take. Before you ask, the USA isn't that old yet, and no, America didn't build one brick in the walls here. So it is America who tries to mess up with the interest of the people living here, and tries to tell them what to do, not the other way around. We are at home here. We want to and going to decide our destiny here.
- I don't really understand why the President could have any rationale to claim anything here. You will know, Mr President that a new era has just emerged on the field of high politics.

The name is science. It is time for science to claim power over the untrue; over the falseness of the so-called neoliberal democratic ideologies of the society. The mental garbage has been accumulated for too long, and now it is time to disappear in the trashcan where it should be. We have the first scientific monetary system with constant purchasing power. It also means no more crises and ups and downs in the economy. The joblessness is unknown here. The bureaucratic mind is eliminated forever, and with it the idleness is gone. We are going to build a scientific society. And we will fight anybody who is trying to stop us doing so. It would be much better, if the whole western world copied our system, instead of trying to destroy us. We cannot be overcome, Mr President, by any power on Earth. We'll fight anybody who tries to destroy what we've accomplished, and we mean it. America has to make a clear distinction between the countries as they were before, and the Confederacy they've formed. Well, enjoy the party. We'll discuss some other matters later privately. All right, Ladies and Gentlemen, please have a great time. This is a celebration, not some debate after all. General, you stay with the Americans, and try to cheer them up a little. And try to explain the basics of the scientific society for them. They won't understand it, but do your best.

- You, my other General, it is time for you to present the Westerners your idea. Come. They are all together. The Austrians, the Germans, the French, the Dutch, the English, the Belgians, the Italians. They're worried, as I can see it from here. And here we are. Have some wine, gentlemen, have a seat. We have excellent cookies and pies as well.

- Mister President, it is a great pleasure to have your valuable time. We have some concern about the loans and the declaration of the Confederation about the non-payment. We are going to have a crash in the bank-sector and in the economy if it will be so.

- And you, gentlemen, cannot invade us nor retaliate like you would have done if the individual countries had remained alone, separated. We are much stronger now than you are together. You gave the loans for the purpose of controlling the countries by the right of the creditor you think you have against the debtor. You have created the loans by an entry in your books. Fictive money, credit money you've created and loaned, and you want flesh and blood for it. It is an old trick the monetary system plays with us all. You are all in the prison of that unwise credit-money system, but we've got much smarter. We have a different monetary system now, and we are not the slaves of any power, like you're the slaves of the monetary power which is controlling your own credit-system and debt. But even then, we can't let the West to have a crash. So the General has a solution for your problems. General, brief us on your presentation if you will. Ensign, bring some wine for the gentlemen. I'm interested as well.

- The Confederation will pay part of the debt accumulated before and during the war by the countries. We pay in your money, 80% of the face value of the original loan. Even this is too generous offer for the second-rate overpriced goods and high interest rates you set upon the loans. Your bank-sector is saved. Now, to boost up your economy, we're going to have an agreement. We need factories of many kinds, fully automatized, the best. We need some military equipment. Ours have been amortized during the war. You send us yours, whatever you can spare, and later you can make new arms for yourselves. Don't worry, we won't invade you. Tanks, trucks, cannons, every sort of guns, we can discuss it in detail. We pay quid pro quo, in cash, in your money. We need to improve our economy. By doing that, we'll improve your economy in the same time. If we have an agreement, we won't buy from China or other countries, only from Western-Europe. This way we're all going to have a splendid prosperity.

Your voters will be happy, the joblessness eliminated, and it means plenty of money for everyone, and you'll be re-elected. That is what you care about most anyway. What do you say?

- Don't look at me, gentlemen. The General's mistake would have been corrected by me, immediately and without mercy. Our economy is based on production. It is different from the old system, yours, where production was placed under the power and fancy of the monetary system. We reversed that foolishness. Now our money is stable and invariable in purchasing power. We do not create unproductive jobs; instead we lower the working hours. We produce what we need, and the monetary system is the servant of the production, not the master of it; in your countries it is. One day you will comprehend the basic principles of the genuine economic system, and you will adjust to it happily. The General will explain. He is in charge of the affairs he has proposed. He has the right to negotiate with you, gentlemen, and to coordinate the business in hand. If in doubt, you can come and see me or call me. Your prosperity is our opulence too. This wine is really exquisite. Please, gentlemen, have some of the best.

- Thank you, Mr President. A man like you, who could stand up against the Americans, is really needed. Now you have given us a lifeline. We'll do our best to cooperate with the Confederation. We recognize it diplomatically and we send ambassadors here.

- You really have no other choice. We are bound together, we are close to each other, and our economy and politics is interwoven historically. We belong to each other; we are Europeans. Enjoy the party, gentlemen. Now, my other adjutant wants to tell me something, so if you excuse me, I have other matters to solve. Rank means duty here first, not privilege.

- Sir, one American fleet is in the Adriatic Sea. My Russian friend tells me that couple of submarines of his are following them. Those toys cannot be detected by the Americans.

- Very interesting. Now, how to use this for our advantage? Can you ask him to give one sonar signal exactly at ten o'clock? Tell the Russians, I have to demolish the ego of the Americans now, this night. I'll be with them soon after. Now I have to improvise a little. Just give me a sign if the Russians have agreed. It's time for a private chat with the American. Colonel, would you ask the President of the USA to give me ten minutes privately, and escort him to the saloon there?

(- You didn't have the electronic devices at that time? Like microphones in the ear, communication things, the gadgets.

- No, that was later. I am trying to recall that evening now, and trying to avoid all the unnecessary chats and greetings, and I have to say this, because in any party always plenty of empty talks were going on. So let's just concentrate on the important things now. So the American was escorted to the saloon, and we had a little chat, just the two of us.)

- Mister President, your country is in trouble. Now we can talk privately, no need to keep the usual formalities. We are closely allied with the Russians. That is not officially announced yet, but it will be very soon. The Confederation has an army which is very closely matched for your army. In fact we are stronger, because the Confederation itself is an army which has a state, to be precise, just like the Prussians had it long ago. Together with the Russians we are the strongest, greatest military power the world has ever seen. Our soldiers don't need and will never have any psychologists to function right; they can kill all right and they can accept loss of lives just fine, unlike your army. I do not want to use this force against America. I

have a concern. One of your Fleet is in the Adriatic Sea. Too close. You have no business in this part of the world. Your real interest is the American Continent. You better adjust your political games accordingly. The Western Europeans don't want you either in Europe anymore. I'll instigate them against America, if you like. I am waiting for your answer. By the way, all of your intelligence officers you sent here to spy on us are in great shape, they are our VIP guests. They will be released shortly, so no need to place other stars on the Wall of Heroes in Langley. We caught them quite easily and they have no information of any value. You can fly them home after we resolve that minor problem of stationing your fleet elsewhere. Quid pro quo.

- Being the President of the Confederation you have the greatest power in the region. You're not answerable to anyone. I have no such power. I'm answerable to Congress. I cannot make all kinds of decisions on my own. You are right. America is in shambles. We are going to explore the ways to work together in the future. We've realized that the power has shifted by the formation of the Confederation. We've to recognize this new block, and we'll send an ambassador. That is all I can say now. We do practice politics through diplomatic channels.

- You are wrong in one point. I am answerable to humanity, but not to any person. But you will see that answer in practice later. Now you can do a friendly act to show some good faith. My adjutant just communicated something to me. Would you permit me to invite the Admiral of your Navy to join us? Colonel, please escort the Admiral here. How is your health, Mr President? Enjoy this unsurpassed wine. *Vinum Rexum, Rex Vinorum* it says on the label. It can be made only in that one place in Hungary, where the weather is just right for it. Admiral, please have a seat, have some wine of real excellence. Now it is 21.58 hour to be precise, that is 20.58 Zulu time. Would you kindly communicate with the Commander of your fleet in the Adriatic See? Please, call him now. No gimmick, Admiral, it is a matter of great importance.

- All right, Admiral, do it. I am very interested in the outcome myself.

- What should I ask from the Commander, Mr President? I am in contact with him now.

- It is 22.00. Ask him, if the sonar detector is in good working order. Just talk to him. No hurry. In fact, I leave you here, gentlemen and I will return shortly. I think you two have something to discuss. It's time to rethink that diplomatic channel idiocy. We are that channel now.

He walked out of the saloon. The President of Poland came to him. Old comrades they were, and old friends too.

- My friend, I think it is time to think about the future. Do me a favour. Search for the most beautiful and smartest female in Poland. I know, it is a rare combination, but you have time. We are going to have a conference in Prague sometime soon. Bring her there. We make it a conference of philosophers, sociologists, something of that sort. Do you like the party so far?

- This Confederation is the best thing what could have happened to Eastern-Europe. The West has a match now. The Americans can't do a thing, except swallow the pill. And the Russians are equals to us. We, Polish don't like the Russians too much, but we have to work together for sure. It is a good feeling to live in a powerful state. Thanks to you, friend.

- And this is only the beginning. Poland will be much bigger in size. Russia will be different. We are equal, you're right. Now I have something to discuss with the American President. Search for that woman, and enjoy the party, my friend.

He went back to the saloon. He asked the President, if he has anything to say to the suggestion that the American ships should be somewhere else.

- Mister President, Admiral, the sonar signal has been sent by my order from a Russian stealth submarine. So you know they are there. You cannot detect them. Or maybe you can, but then they'll respond immediately, so don't even try. There are many, following your fleet. In ten minutes they can send the whole Fleet to the bottom of the Adriatic Sea and then you are in war with Russia and with us too. Nobody needs that now or ever. I do not want to humiliate you in public. I do not want to wage war on you. We are not enemies. All I am asking is that the USA better to leave the Adriatic and the Mediterranean Sea alone once and for all. And start packing from Western-Europe. This is one of the conditions set by me, before we are going to do serious business with the West, so they are going to ask you officially to close down your military bases there sooner or later. It is better for your reputation if you do it step by step beforehand. Admiral, please give the order to the fleet to start manoeuvring, and head to Gibraltar, and home. The submarines will follow you. Any resistance will meet unmatched response. I think I made myself absolutely clear. The world doesn't have to know about this little business of ours. We can discuss the possibility of the economic contracts and more. Now you're doing politics out of diplomatic channels; you get used to it. The General is in charge of our affairs with you, so talk to him, or call me, Mr President.

Next there are the Russians to work on. It was a long struggle with them during the Presidency of Hungary, and he believed he has built a friendship with the President of Russia. Without them there would have been no war, or only at the cost of much greater hardship. But Russia is a category by itself. Nobody could understand Russia by rational means alone. He never tried. He approached them by appealing to the Russians from the standpoint of the Empire. The Soviet Union was an Empire. He offered them a much bigger one. Now they believed him. The labour of the previous years has been yielded results. This sonar signal was the proof of it. Now it is time to explore the friendship deeper.

- Mister President, Major General, excuse me for the delay, but I had to deal with the enemy first. Thank you for the favour. You already know my adjutant General here.

- Well, Mr President finally of the Confederation, it was my pleasure. So far everything you have said have happened the way you predicted it will happen. I can see no limitation to our future friendship. We decided to go on and support your way; it produces results.

- It is great news, Mr President. General, how far are you now from the top of your military?

- I have an Army-Corps and I am in the General Staff, but I'm still quite far from the top.

- Maybe we can do something about your advance. Have a Garda Army, the Spetsnaz, and couple of more stars on your shoulders. What you see here and now is a beginning and by no means an end. If you permit me, I would like to visit you in Moscow to discuss it further. Now we don't have enough time. All kinds of high politics going on in a party like this. The Chinese has to be calmed down now. We had some immigration restrictions on them, ousted.

- You have your open invitation to come whenever you wish, Mr President. I ask you to do me a favour. Tell me in advance when you want to come, and hold lecture in the University of Moscow, because many academicians and economists asking me to have first-hand knowledge about the base of the new monetary system you introduced in Hungary and now

in the Confederation. We have to understand the theory in full. The procedure we know, but the basis of all what isn't really understood by many. We'll broadcast it if you agree.

- But of course, no problem. Sooner or later you have to do the same. In the meantime, if I may suggest a political step or two, give a big boost to the carrier of your nephew. Develop the army, and we'll talk over the immediate necessities and possibilities in Moscow.

(- OK. So you talked to everybody. The American fleet turned around and left. The Chinese stayed two more days, and you had an agreement with them. The West was happy; every country recognized the Confederation and had sent ambassadors to Budapest, the Polish started searching for a girl, what else is there to say? This tale is getting a little boring. Give it an enhancement somehow. Boost it, I mean. We have much to cover.

- Yes. Thanks for reminding me. The Russian General advanced unpredictably fast. Some old Generals had heart attach, some had accidents, others retired, and some died without reason explained. So the Major General advanced to the rank of Colonel General, had his Garda Army, had the Spetsnaz, and advanced in the General Staff, too. My adjutants have been promoted to the rank of Major General. They deserved it. The West built automatized factories of many kind, sent us the precious military equipment, our army was brought to ever greater strength, the money was stable, everybody was soldier first, and citizen second, because somehow we forgot to change from the military rule of the state back to civilian rule. There was no Parliament, no elections, nothing of those meaningless things. The logistics' hardware and programme was introduced and brought to near perfection. There is no need for anything else for the smooth functioning of the state and the economy. Soldiers, specialists, scientists have taken over the direction of the economy and government. Everybody was free to go wherever he wanted to go. In time the working hours were lowered to 6 hours, and everybody was happy to serve in the armed forces. Or it is better to say that now. Since we've eliminated the worst elements of mankind, there were no crimes, there was no need to lock the doors, but it is boring to you. In three months after the formation of the Confederation I went to Moscow. It was time for some action. We couldn't afford consolidation at this stage. Permanent movement was the key to success. There is always a possibility for improvement.)

- Mister President, we have achieved great success. The monetary system is working splendidly, the living standard of the masses is unprecedented in the region, and we have a military dictatorship. So it is time we advance further together. I want to offer you a third of the Ukraine and half of Belarus. Those countries are not real political entities. I offer you the parts inhabited by or mentally closer to the Russians. We want cultural homogeneity to avoid later problems; it's better for the people, better for the state. They'll move freely to any side.

- We cannot just take them or occupy them. Actually we could, but it wouldn't look right.

- There will be a demand for the secession. We are going to have a popular vote on the question. The agitation-propaganda is already in progress. We can collaborate in the political manoeuvres. Within a month it can be done. Half of the Ukraine is rather Polish, so they'll go to Poland. We already had some shifting of the borders within the Confederacy. Borders don't mean too much anymore. Nationalism of the old is the past. We are smarter now. The future is different, more adequate with reality.

- OK. Now, what do you want for exchange? Because now comes the real politics.

- Karelia. It is cold, inhabited by Finnish and Lapps, and I need it to get Scandinavia into the Confederation. We need the northern brain, the northern genes, because we are still full of idiots. For you, Karelia doesn't mean too much. You are going to have much bigger territory in the south. All I am asking now is a signed paper that Russia gives Karelia to the Confederacy in exchange for the territory the Confederacy gives to Russia. We are going to sign an alliance in Helsinki within a month, after I give you the eastern parts of the Ukraine and Belarus. And right after that we start the expansion, both of us, together. Here are the documents to sign, and here is the plan for the military cooperation in the coming war, for your eyes only. You, Mr President, and you, Colonel General as well, sign these papers now if you will, so I have something to negotiate with the Finnish.

- All right. Let's do it. Uncle, sign it. Here... Done. Now, we'll have vodka to celebrate.

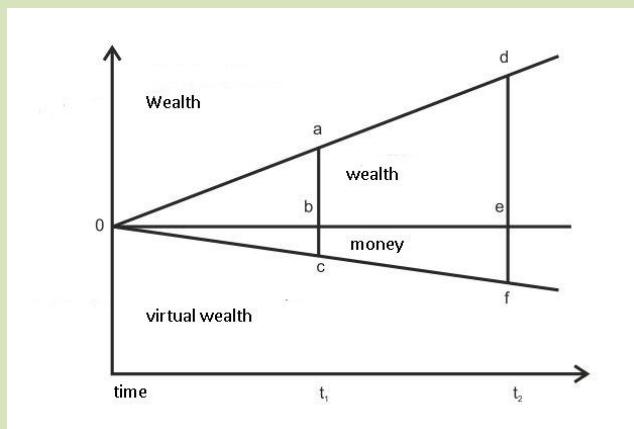
- Very well. Colonel General, do you have a girlfriend? I don't mean to be indiscreet. Just wait. That is all I am asking now. Just wait a little. Where is the vodka? Tomorrow lecture-time, so I cannot drink too much. I might say enough idiocies there anyway.

The auditorium was filled with really interested specialists and students. The TV broadcasted the speech not only in Russia, but internationally.

- Ladies and gentlemen, it is a great honour for me to address you about the theory of the money. I was asked to keep this discourse at the philosophical level, so the practice you are already familiar with. The base is a fascinating subject by itself. The society, any society can be divided into three thermodynamic systems. The first is the economy, and here we can apply the original concepts of thermodynamics almost without changing the initial meanings of the terms. The only difference being that we are the particles of the system now, not the gas molecules. That also makes it a little more difficult to understand, because we are inside the system, and whatever we can say can be refuted by someone else; everybody is so very smart inside the system, it is one good reason so few comprehend the analysis. It could be one objective reason why we misunderstand the system we live in. Imagine a gas container, and imagine you are one of the particles inside. You never ever come to the realization of the concept of pressure; that concept can be arriving at only from the outside. The pressure is one of the main qualities of the gas in the container, so you will miss out on the understanding of the system. We are inside when we talk about the quality of money, so we must take a good look at it from the outside in order to catch the major parameters. The money I am holding in my hand represents two different things at once, but before these it is an energy-quantum, going hand to hand, taking out real consumer goods and services in every turn. Now, the two representations in everyday terms: first it says, I have already done something for the society, real or imagined good, and for this service I have not received reimbursement yet. This money is not the payment, only an acknowledgement for my service done and payment not yet received for it. The real payment is the consumer goods I really need for the sustainment of my life, like food and shelter, gasoline, etc. I have chosen not to receive the goods, but I'm holding the receipt of my services instead, so I can buy whatever whenever I please; I defer the payment due to me. This is the first meaning of this printed paper. The second meaning of this paper or coin is, the form is irrelevant now, that you altogether, the society, is obligated to supply me with the equivalent value of goods and services I have already done for you. You have to get, create or make my order. We consume individually and create communally.

This piece of receipt is a debt, your debt for the holder of this receipt, and you will be in debt until I get what I want for it on the market. When I transfer this receipt to the seller, I get paid with real goods, my credit to society is discharged, and I give this piece of debt to the seller, who now becomes the creditor of the society. Money is a special kind of debt which never needs to be repaid; some people always choose to have money in place of the goods it can purchase, so they postpone, delay the repayment, although they could convert the debt of the society any time they wished, but only individually. It is a voluntary go-without, a genuine giving up something, consciously or not, carrying the receipts, instead of being paid immediately. Some can do that, some can't. Some people must have the real valuables, because he is

in immediate need, some have enough at home, and can go without. How much of what can people go without, gives them freedom; the more money they have the more freedom they have to choose on the market later. This voluntary giving up our right to get paid, this deferring payment is the thermodynamic free energy, or in economy we call this quantity *virtual wealth*. You never ever understand this concept fully unless you studied thermodynamics. Here is a graphical presentation



for it. The upper positive line represents the total wealth of the society, those which are on the market and those which aren't, like bridges and land, highways and buildings, animals in the forest, and other things are not for sale; and as economy is growing we'll make more things and greater and greater quantity of consumer goods become available in the market for purchase. In the zero point society has nothing to offer for sale, everybody consumes immediately what has been created. The lower negative line represents the virtual wealth, an imagined wealth, which is very well defined nonetheless and must be proportional with the total wealth, and we measure this with the money. In a given  $t_1$  time society has  $a - b$  quantity wealth, but behaves like  $a - c$  quantity would be available. Another  $t_2$  time has another  $d - e$  quantity, but behaves like it had  $d - f$  quantity. The more it has the more money is necessary in circulation in the pocket or checking account of the consumers in order to be able to take this quantity out of the market on stable value. Money measures the quantity of the virtual wealth; not the whole wealth, as the quantity theory of money said; remember, it's a debt, a negative value, not something positive like the total wealth in the quantitative theory of money. They try to equate a negative value with a positive value, so their logic is phoney from the beginning. Money is debt, so the virtual wealth is negative of course; a very special kind of debt, which never needs to be repaid, but continuously paid by society to every individual. This debt is held by the individual and the debt of the community for each citizen who has money. So it is very silly logic to consider money as wealth; only what money can buy is wealth. But mathematically  $\text{Virtual wealth} = \text{Purchasing power} \times \text{Quantity of money}$ . A society can make as much money as it wants, it is not the quantity of money what matters, but the quantity of real wealth a unit of money can buy on the market. Here the commodity theory is false, which tries to tell us that money is just another consumer good, available for sale and

behaves like any other commodity. This very foolish and sick logic tells us that the money measures itself, which can be applied maybe only at the time of deflation, until the economy is destroyed by the shortage of money; a very artificial shortage, which is an ill state of affairs by itself. The virtual wealth determines the purchasing power of money and not the opposite way. Being a measure, money must have permanent purchasing power in order to function right, according to the concept and the essence of the system. Money has to be proportionately issued with the increment of the real consumer wealth, as it appears on the market. It's a genuine standard, a measure, and the logic of the subject must be observed, and the subject is the free energy, which must be growing if society is about to succeed. The free energy can be destroyed very easily if you know thermodynamics, so can be the virtual wealth, and it was destroyed periodically time after time without understanding as we know the history of economic crises, when the bankers issued and withdrew the money, completely wrongly timed, they themselves causing the inflations and deflations what they always denied, blaming instead the economy which they destroyed beforehand. Money must be issued by the community, not the banks, not the politicians but by a bureau like the Bureau of Weights and Measures standardized, because it is the debt of the community, and the purchasing power of money must be kept constant, because it is a deferred payment, so cannot change in value between the receiving and the spending it, and there is always money in the pocket of the people, so the purchasing power always must be permanent; it is the right of the creditor, besides it's the logic of the subject. No banker or elected official or politician should have a role in it, just like they cannot have a saying about the litre-standard or the length of the meter etalon. The



credit-money is issued by the banks through their illogical fractional reserve system, and uncreated into nothingness when it is paid back to the banks. Credit is exactly like money, it is money, but it doesn't exist in reality; it is only imagined to exist in order to interest could be charged on it by the banker. Money, unlike the credit, should not bear interest just by existence, being a measure. The quantity matters; the banks issued and uncreated it exactly in the wrong times, so the crush of economy was always part of life, they talk about it like it would be similar to the weather, out of the reach of humans to do something about it, but it is the clear betraying of the nations. The bankers are basically a very ignorant class of people, bureaucrats, who never learned science, but accurately accounting every unlawfully created penny, and want the interest after every non-existent loan. The fractional reserve is a grave mistake if I want to be polite; if I want to say the truths, then the creators of it are gangsters, traitors of society, cheaters, thieves, but of course I want to be polite here in front of the TV. We have made money the servant of life, and it must be the servant of life, not the people be made slaves of the money. It is very easy procedure to do the practical things. You already have the know-how; we had it a century ago discovered by this great man, Frederick Soddy, a Nobel-laureate chemist of 1923, but it was never implemented until I did it; a conspiracy of silence kept it out, besides no economist was smart enough to comprehend the theory. You just always have to go back to thermodynamics for the theory. It is time for science, the real science to claim its rightful place in the guidance of society, and it is the duty of every citizen to oust the politicians who are still in the service of the monetary power of old, and keeping

their citizens in everlasting slavery by keeping the false system of credit. We have liberated our people, and the leaders of the Confederation know how to lead and make the citizens happy and rich without the circus of virtual democratic elections to place another marionette puppet peacock to some chair he is unable to fulfil the duties of. The economy in our territory is liberated from the slavery of credit-money; production has no limit except the engineering knowledge and productive power of the people. Study the real sciences instead of the old dismal science, because without understanding the base you won't know when you do something very wrong in practice. Economy finally became a science, it's like engineering basically. The people have the right to live their life, not only serve the money-guys all the time. Well, I might've become a little political, but the knowledge of money must be taught in every school, so the citizens knew the system of their freedom or slavery all over the world. I take questions now to clear whatever I blurred, but we have limited time now.

- Sir, what backs up the money? What should be used to back-up insurance if any?
- You mean gold? Some unlearned did that, and made a big mess by creating a three-body problem. No, money is a measure, so what backs up the litre-standard, the kilogram-standard, the meter? The virtual wealth needs the backing up, because that is what measured by the money. That back-up is the creative power of the people. The smarter, the better inventor, the working people are the back-up for the smooth functioning of the economy. Money needs to be issued accordingly. Read the books, where all these are explained. If you don't learn, you will be made slaves like we were, like in the Bible the Egyptians were made slaves by Josef. Now, that is a fascinating story, a blueprint for taking away the virtual wealth of free people.
- Sir, what determines the quantity of the virtual wealth?
- Two very different determinants, the real wealth and the psychological factor. How much consumer goods can be made by the industry and what is the level where a member of the given society feels she absolutely needs that much and cannot live with less. It is like the free energy; the total energy we have available for conversion and the machine which converts the heat energy into kinetic energy or useful work determines how many per cent we get out finally. The energy unconverted to useful work becomes entropy-energy, a waste. In the West the standard is higher, in Africa or in the slums it is lower. The psychology counts in it. That is the reason it is hard to comprehend; the human factor counts, and we are inside the system.
- Sir, what determines the purchasing power of money?
- The ultimate factor is not the quantity of money in circulation, but rather how much the people allow taking away from them by the rentier. The level at which they say no to the taxation, how much they have to work free for the right to work, how easily they can be made slaves; so it is a psychological factor at any given level of the economy. Less you let them abuse you, the higher standard you achieve, and the higher is the purchasing power of the actual money. The key is to get rid of every social and economic perpetuum mobile, but that is another story. It would take us to the capital redemption and the mixing of two kinds of debts. You have to understand: the real money doesn't bear interest by existence, only when it's loaned out. The credit-money always bears interest; it was created for that end. The investment in the agents of production bears interest, but that totally different from the monetary debt, it is rather a reward, and called dividend. But that is another fascinating story.

Next day he flew back to Budapest. Well before this an unexpected plague started in Africa. Algeria, Mali, Libya suffered first and suffered big time. The UN couldn't handle the situation. The Confederation deployed medical troops to help the civilians. Later we are going to explore this story, in the meantime let's concentrate on the Finnish problem, and another very interesting story. The day after he returned to Budapest he asked for the chief of the military personnel office. What he wanted was the photo and data of the relatives of the leading officers of the State. Female relatives, what he was looking for, between the ages of 18 and 25. When he received the dossiers, he just put them aside for a moment.

- Protocol, I want the Ambassador of Finland to come here tomorrow by 10 for breakfast.  
(- Because by that time I had the logistics in place, and just had to say something, and there was somebody from every department in the staff. The General responsible for the logistics has done an excellent job in building up the system from the top down to the local level. So I just had to ask, and everything was done efficiently by specialists of the given field, not by elected idiots, like before.)

He looked over the dossiers. The Commander of the Army did have a niece, beautiful, but too young. Others were too ugly, too old, not enough education, so he just called the officer to take the dossiers back. Have to look for a candidate somewhere else.

- Didn't find anything, Sir?  
- The niece of the General would do, but she looks too young.  
- That picture is three years old. She is almost 19 by now. She is a student in the University here. I believe history of art and languages she studies. No wonder you didn't know about her. The family is kind of hiding her. Since her uncle became the Commander of the Army, they do not want any public embarrassment. She is still a virgin; kind of.  
- Why would that be an embarrassment? Give it to me straight, Colonel.  
- She is a virgin, because she never really had a boyfriend.  
- I could never have figured it out myself, Colonel. I told you to be straight to the point.  
- She is bisexual, I believe. That explains her unusually high IQ.  
- Explain.  
- The bisexual girls do not have to attend to those useless things the hetero girls have. So the rational side of their brain is more like the brain of the men. She is smart; beautiful, likes men too, but still undecided, meaning stick to the girls, flirts with the boys. No steady girlfriend.  
- OK, understood. Master-sergeant, here is the address. Bring her up here. Thank you, Colonel, take the dossiers back.

When she arrived, it was dinnertime already. Mutual greetings and the food were served. Very tricky foods were served. They talked a lot about everything, and she passed the first exam. She consumed that food gracefully; she conversed in 4 languages, and almost about everything she could tell him something interesting, had good humour and great personality. The air was sizzling around her.

- Sir, I think you don't advertise your personality too much. You never appear on the news personally, I mean you do not give popular speeches like the elected leaders do.

- No, that is not my way. I believe in the right people in the right place. My job is to choose and oversee. I am elected all right; or rather I elected the government, and it functions better. I am kind of shy when it comes to shining in front of the public. But you like that, don't you?

- Well, yes, I love to be in the centre of attention and they say I can handle it all right. Telling you the truth I don't think you just needed someone to have this very sophisticated dinner with. Even if so, it wouldn't be I, who you wanted to waste time on just for nothing.

- You're right. What would you say if I offered you a job? A very good job, but it takes almost all of your time. I cannot actually offer this job to anybody. You have been selected first because your uncle is a high officer of the state, and you're smart. You are going to have an extensive training in languages, history, protocol, and the matters of the state among other studies. You can have your university degree in the meantime if you want that.

- What is that job, Sir? Some interest of the State?

- Actually it has not yet been created, but soon will be. Yes, it is an interest of the State. I think you would be perfect for it. I'd be pleased and delighted if you took it. But first you have to go through the coaching and we'll see how you advance. And there is another condition also. But I think you're the right one for the role, more ways than you think. We will talk it over later.



- All right. If you say so, I take the job, whatever it is. We can change our mind in the probation period, can't we? I love challenges, but like my freedom too.

- Very good. You are obligated to live in this castle; you'll have your own living quarter, staff, and an extensive education and freedom. Master-sergeant, send some people for the personal belongings of this lady here, and order the house-keeping to find a suitable Queen-size quarter for her. You don't have to worry about your clothes, Kate. You will be supplied with the best of the best. The protocol will take over from here. Thank you for accepting my offer. And your name is perfect for the job too. Kate.

(- Yeah, she was really something. How did you solve her sexual preference and sex-hunger in-house? I hope she was satisfied all right.

- I assigned two inside help for her next day, the most beautiful bisexual girls, who were the officers of Felix. She was happy, satisfied, and even later the girls stayed with her as body-guards, chamber-ladies and our spies. She was fine; she could concentrate on her studies, and later on her duty, her sex-life was perfect, no worries needed. She was very active later in propagating girlie-love.)

Next day the ambassador of Finland has arrived at ten. Breakfast was served, and nothing much was said beside the usual. After breakfast one of his adjutant Generals joined them.

- I was in Moscow, as you are aware of it. Well, that speech on the money is causing turmoil all over the world, so the people becoming radical enough to be ready to oust any government basically; useful to take it into consideration for all. You know, the President is an old friend of mine, and while we were drinking vodka as very unusual in Russia, I saw one of those coloured something on the wall. How they call it, I always forget some things lately, General?

- It was a map, Sir. The political map of the world it is called.

- Ah, yes. So I looked at it, and noticed something strange. Did you know that on those maps they paint the different countries with different colours? Yes, I thought you know it. Do we have something like that, General, here somewhere? Yes, we have. So I noticed this strange long line here. Is this familiar to you, Mr Ambassador? I thought so. What I mean, I said to my friend that it must be very cold up there. If it is a border, then somebody have to mind that borderline all the time. Poor soldiers, I said. It is no small task to stay out there and brave the elements in winter-time. Lots of warm clothing could be spared if the line would be much shorter. So I asked the President, why not make that line somewhere here instead? You see? So finally he agreed with me, and we made this short line, so his soldiers won't have to be out in the freezing cold. The Russians are famously caring for their soldiers, didn't you know that? Anyway, he gave the rest of that land to me. But what do I do with that land? The General told me that this land used to belong to Finland. Did you know that? Of course you did. Well, that is the reason I asked you to join me and discuss this matter. This land now belongs to the Confederation. This coffee is excellent. I have somebody here in the culinary staff with an extensive knowledge of the coffee-treatment and he understands the secret of this pleasure. Do you like it, Mr Ambassador? Yes, excellent, isn't it? I love this rich taste. General, what was the topic before the coffee? Sometimes I just cannot concentrate on the business in hand. Something was said about some lines on the map as I recall.

- Sir, the land of Karelia we acquired from Russia. Finland can have it.

- Oh, yes. As you know, we are an open organization of different states. I give Finland the privilege to ask me to become a member of the Confederation, so I can give this territory to Finland. Murmansk converts to international city. You're all white, Mr Ambassador. Drink something. OK, General. The Ambassador cannot decide on this matter, so fly him to Helsinki on your plane, take the documents with you, and answer the questions they might have there. We can even have a video-conference if the President and the Prime Minister wants to talk to me. We will sign the official documents in Helsinki in about 3 weeks from now. As soon as we agree, the Russian Army starts the evacuation of Karelia, which could be tomorrow, if you have real politicians for Heads of State. If you don't have real politicians, we will cause an uprising, and the new ones will sign soon. Have a nice trip, Mister Ambassador.

The rest of the day went by organizing, working on the matters of the state. The plague which originated in Africa has come very close. Libya, Algeria, Mali, and the surrounding territories suffered great loss. Actually they suffered so great loss that the states couldn't function any more. The Medical Corps of the helping Confederation was present everywhere and evacuated the high officials of the states in distress. In exchange the high officials have signed the alliance and the joining documents to the Confederation. About 70 – 80% of the population have died in every country. The strong lived. With the signing of the documents the Medical

Corps of the Confederation was the only organization which could be in those areas officially. In fact it meant that nobody else was allowed to get in. The UN and the West was governed by bureaucrats, so they didn't know what to do. Nobody cared about the people anyway, only about the resources. The time they react is just too long. Egypt lost about half of its population. Libya was almost totally deserted. The oil fields were taken over and run by the Army of the Confederation. Now the plague raged in Albania. They have signed away their country as well. The borders have been sealed airtight. The Greek Army was asked to seal the Albanian border at the south with the help of the Army of the Confederation.

While all this was going on by the supervision of the Commander of the Army, the conference in Prague was about to commence.

- Commander, you come with me to the conference. It's time for some fun. How many countries have we acquired already in Africa? We have now eight countries there, General. You work yourself to death. It is an order. The work supposed to be left to be done by able and bright officers. You'll know they're able if you let them work alone. If you always do everything yourself, they won't enjoy working for you. The real leader is choosing the right men to the right place, and let them create. So we are going to Prague, and we are going now.

- All right, Sir. My officers can do whatever there is to be done. Almost the whole of North-Africa is ours. The leaders of Egypt will sign very soon. They don't want to die. The other leaders live in luxury here, so why take chances? The oil is ours. Our workers are safe. OK, let's go to Prague. Are you going to have a speech? I can hardly restrain myself.

- General, Egypt can wait. It's ours. We are the only doers anywhere. Now we have something more important things to settle. And no sarcasm, you will thank me for this trip.

The brain of the Confederacy was in Prague. The new philosophy and sociology was not understood by many, so it was time to bring some light into the heads of the philosophers of the World. The new economy, the scientific monetary system, the thermodynamic view of society had to be cleared up for the future generations. The opening speech was for the President himself to perform.

- It is a great pleasure of mine to open this conference. It is still not clear for many of the philosophers that we have stepped into a new era. The monetary system of yesterday had been recognized faulty more than a century ago. Yet today only the Confederation introduced the new, scientific monetary system into practice, and Russia follows soon. In the past months it has been confirmed superior to the old one in practice as well as it was demonstrated superior in theory long before. Something like a conspiracy existed to push that theory aside: the conspiracy of silence; but now it is here and flourishing in full bloom for everyone to see and learn from. The constant purchasing power of the money is the essence of money, and many economists just begin to comprehend that economy can be made a science. As the great minds of the nineteenth century had created and recognized the importance of the thermodynamic concept of free energy, the great minds of our era have understood the concept of the virtual wealth in political economy, which is the exact analogue of the free energy of the thermodynamics. There is only one science out there. The concepts of one field can be applied and should be applied into other fields; because there are just a few laws exist in the

Universe as real laws, and no matter where those laws were discovered first. Less law we have, the more advanced science and philosophy become. More laws mean that we still haven't identified or discovered the really important ones which really do matter and govern nature and society. Thermodynamics was not created only for chemistry. In the beginning it was of course, but later some perception had altered the original intension. The real laws are universal. These are valid for the society as well as for the chemistry or physics. We are not talking about gas particles or people or countries when we are thinking in real philosophy. We're always thinking in and about systems, and the struggle of the mind is to figure out the parameters of the system, identify the structure we investigate as real thermodynamic system, and in this process the elements of the system can be anything which is capable to produce free energy, gas molecules or people or countries, etc. When they become a system, then the singular elements lose their identity, their original quality; instead a new quality appears as the essence of the system. It was a great mistake of Cantor to invent his theory of the infinites, but it would take us too far now. Someone will have a presentation about it. Another distinction should be made between the activation energy and the reaction energy type concepts. The mixture of these clear definitions has made the non-distinction of the monetary debt and the investment in capital goods which are essentially different things, and created a *perpetuum mobile* in society, which caused great troubles, like the revolutions of the communists among others. If you understand the essence of the system as such, you understand the whole range of life as well. The human mind has its own history. Mind is not something universal, not an entity by itself. It can be analysed, and two different workings of it can be differentiated. These are the "allowed" or permitted workings of the mind, namely the *causal creator* and the *teleological conqueror*. You can find better names for it. Because these two are working together, many times the mind mixes them. With the concoction we'll have the two operations which I have called "not allowed" or not permitted by nature, namely the *causal conqueror* and the *teleological creator*. But of course you can name them otherwise if you dare. Thanks for the laugh; it was a joke of course. By this analysis of the working of the brain, and the application of the laws of thermodynamics we have the whole world under our understanding and power. Knowledge is power, and this Baconian saying never lost its validity. By the right knowledge and understanding we can create the practice for the advancement of mankind. There are two breaking-points we cannot resolve. The first is the beginning of the Universe; the other is the beginning of Life. Both are way more complicated than the human brain can handle. We don't have the concept for it. This admission doesn't give us the right to invent some Absolute being in mind or reality. That was the outcome of the non-permitted brain-workings, and brings up more problems than it set out to solve. After the beginning we are at home in the world. Why do we understand the world after the point of beginning? We have the thermodynamic system ready right after that infinite point, which explains the why; before that we have the pure potentiality, and we cannot handle that scientifically. But the yearning for the Absolute produced the philosophies of the infinite. There are other problems also, like the getting used to the conservative ideas, and the out-casting of the new. For illustration purposes I have to tell you a story. Not too long ago the historians refused even to look at the work of Heribert Illig, a German historian, who ascertained that 297 years were added to the timeline by the Emperor Constantine of the Eastern-Roman Empire, by Otto III of the German Empire and Pope Sylvester II. He ably defended his case, the rea-

sons and the method of the persons performing that addition. But the mind of the people involved in social studies was and still is catastrophically confused. Charlemagne, they believed, had an army full in iron in an age when there was no iron at all basically, they used wooden equipment to toil the soil even, and there was nothing to spare what we call today the Virtual Wealth. There was no Charlemagne either. He is a fiction, never existed. For the realization of this fact it is enough to read through his assumed fake diary, which is rather a joke. An emperor wouldn't ever write anything like that, only some grocer or monk. The historians believed in those stories written by some monks to fill up the missing 297 years, and they created the so-called Dark-Ages. Illig proved that the age between 614 and 911 never existed, and not only verified his case, but also showed that there was no proof for that 297 years of Dark-Age. Every single document aged there turned out to be fraudulent; we have no archaeological findings from that age, but the historians believed in those frauds, just as the bankers have believed in their fantasy, the fraudulent monetary system. Hollywood jumped on those dark ages' stories of fantasy of the foolish monks, and made them ever more fantastic. The people watched those silly movies and believed that those fantasies are or were true. Then the people didn't believe Illig, because they've become so accustomed to the movie-fantasies as truth. Never commit this crime against science and humanity ever again. What is new in an idea or theory is not immediately refutable without taking a good look at it first. It is not sure that every new idea or theory is true just because it is new, either. Always examine it with an open mind. I hope this conference will advance us to new territories of understanding and practice for the benefit of all. So before you all go to sleep here, I declare this conference open. Have some really great debate. You are finally free from the need of the political correctness used to be required by the liberal democrat stupidities. Say whatever is in your mind; say the truth, only the truth and nothing but the truth. None will be fired even if contradicts me. But you must have a very good motive to do so. Well, thank you again.

He walked away while the applause was still sounding. He sat down beside the President of Poland and the General. There were couple of good brainpower-exhibitions, and then, just before the end of the first session a beautiful woman of 26 went to the podium, and started her presentation. After ten minutes the General became more agitated by listening to her.

- This state of affairs is not the proper framework for the concept, and I mean it in the Hegelian sense. What we have now in front of us is the war of cultures. In this war the opposition cannot be convinced logically or coaxed by the power of the brain alone. So the opposition should be eradicated instead. The ideology of the liberal democracy of the wrong type has been invented for the inferior males by the inferior males when they have increased in number and power. The monks and the money-changers were these inferiors. The knighthood has

its handicap; it's eliminating the superior males during the fights. This ideology is connected with vested interest, but has nothing to do with the truth in reality. We are fortunate enough to live in a new world which opened up almost unlimited potentiality for universal development. The phi-



Iosophy of the new generation liberated the minds of many. We have no time to wait in vain while it will liberate the mind of all. The masses have no brain. The liberal democrats use their brain for the defence of the past idiocies. They were manipulated and are manipulated today outside of the Confederation. We have to conquer the whole world by the power of the mind or else in order to liberate mankind and reinstitute the truth and adequacy. In this coming age the army is an all-important instrument, our Saviour. Every citizen is required to become soldier of the first grade in order to achieve our goal and secure the freedom of humanity. Philosophy has to step into the phase of practice now and help the fight with weapons. We have to liberate mankind. The age of the empty ideologies and concepts are over. The theory is clear. The fight is on to embody that theory now. I personally would like to thank the Commander in Chief of the Army of our great Confederation for his honorific presence here. A new era of knighthood is about to descend on the world, and I thank the first knight, OK, maybe the second knight, and I wish him great success on the field of battle. Ladies and gentlemen, I ask you to welcome and applause the Commanding General of our great Army and through him our brave soldiers who serve to advance humanity to the new scientific society. Thank you.

(- Well, she was some amazon. Not bad at all. No wonder the General became agitated. At that time they were not accustomed to beauty like her and thinking like hers jointly in one.

- Nope, women like her were rare. Girls of that age became accustomed to say whatever the media suggested such as world peace, save the people and democratic values, all the crap. She was beautiful and smart, wasn't she? Well done, back to our story.)

- Who the hell is this woman? She gives better speech of battle than any man, and she is mind-bogglingly beautiful. I say, this speech and woman alone was worth to come here.

- Employ her, General. She has a doctorate in philosophy. She can be given the rank of Colonel, with the assignment of political adjutant or commandant of the ideology or propaganda. She is a diamond. Go, get her, she is single. Good luck, General.

- Take it as an order from me, General. Well, my friend, Poland really has treasures. She is with the General. Our work is done here. Half of Ukraine will be yours very soon. The Poland of the sixteenth century will be created anew again. And this is only the beginning.

- Hungary has tripled in size. Good work, President. You gave Moldavia to Romania, in exchange for Transylvania. You merged Croatia and the northern part of Serbia into Hungary in exchange for Bosnia. You induced the Slovaks to go to the oil fields of Libya for good salary, and merged their country into Hungary. So we are neighbours again. The Slovenians will ask for unification soon as I heard. Not that it matters too much anymore, the borders I mean, but it is nice to settle the historical justice once and for all. What is your plan for Albania?

- Will be ours, empty. That country has no right to be. It was the remnant of the Turks, as was Bosnia. Fucken thieves they are all. They have signed the joining documents. There was no choice for them. The Muslims will go to Africa or Turkey. OK, my friend. See you in Helsinki. We haven't even started yet. Great times are still ahead of us. The Polish airborne divisions are unmatched. I want more of them. They are needed. They will see some action soon.

Next day he flew home to Budapest. His work has been done in Prague. The General and Jadwiga were together. She became Colonel, closely working with the General. They liked each other. That was all that mattered. The popular vote in the Ukraine and Belarus divided those countries between Russia, Poland and Hungary. Hungary now occupied the whole of the Carpathian Mountains and more. No need to print Great-Hungary maps or remind the people bloodthirstily to Trianon; it can be done in a more effective way, actually in the only way possible. How stupid it was to demand the pre-Trianon territories without any political and military power to back it up before. Now he was the Saviour in the eyes of the Hungarians. The next step was Helsinki. The Finnish would have been crazy to let Karelia go, so they happily signed the documents. Now Finland became the territory of the Confederation. Then Russia signed over Karelia, and the Confederation and Russia signed an agreement of mutual help in case of war. But by taking over part of the Ukraine and Belarus, they had to adjust their monetary system according to the Confederation's monetary system. They were content to do so. It was the logical step to take. Kate was there with the President, and was introduced to the Russian General, who by then acquired another star and became the Commander of the Russian Army. Feodor was his name. Kate and Feodor were well acquainted, and they knew they were created for each other, or ordered to do so. In Helsinki again, the whole world has come together, and the high politics had its battlefield to play on. After the signing ceremonies, the party started. Those parties are all-important occasions for the leaders to discuss the matters of the state between each other, freed from the pressure their people listening in.

- General, we're in good enough shape with the help of the West, thanks to your genius. But we have a problem. Libya and Tunisia are almost uninhabited. We are sending people there, but it is not enough. What do we know about the Italians? Maybe we could get them into the Confederation by offering Libya and more. Go, and see what can be done, then bring them somewhere, so we can talk with them privately. I am going to have a chat with the Greeks. Where are they? Yes, I see them. Not in a great shape economically. The tourist industry isn't really working miracles these days, I suppose. OK, go to the Italians; work on them for a while. I can handle the Greeks with the other General...

- Gentlemen, aren't Helsinki too far from Athens? But I am glad you're here. We are doing some joint venture sealing borders in Albania, I heard. At least that's what my Generals are telling me. How is life in your beautiful country? Must be great, or am I mistaken?

- Sir, we are having difficulties. The truth is, we would like to explore the possibilities of joining the Confederation. There is a very strong agitation amidst the people in this direction. And everybody can see that the standard of living is much greater in your territory.

- Well, my Generals told me that your army isn't really up to the standard we expect. The economy is more down than ever before. But of course the history matters. What we are doing, beside the rejuvenation of the economy and liberating civilisation and homogenizing the culture, is the restoration of the historical justice. You see, gentlemen, history was, and in some sense still is in the critical state. Something has happened in the past, and that state of affairs has been preserved by the centuries, although that something happened by chance only, and not by ineluctability or necessity. So we are unfreezing those frozen states of affairs, and make history more like a system in equilibrium. This way some countries disappear, others getting larger, and everything is much better governable this way. We have economical

units instead of artificial borders. How come we are talking about history, General? What was the original question? You see, gentlemen, I have been asking the Council to relieve me from this pressure and elect someone more fit for this job, but no avail. General, what are we talking about now?

- Sir, in Albania, if we weren't there to help them in the quarantine, half of Greece would be dead by now. I think what you were trying to tell them is, if they let us improve Greece up to our standards, they can have some of Asia Minor back from Turkey.

- But dear General, the President didn't say such thing. Or maybe he did? We just can't figure it out how could that be. Let me repeat what I understood. We have to improve the military, then we can join the Confederation, and we wage a war together on Turkey, and the ancient Greek territories will be ours in Asia Minor.

- More or less, Mr Prime Minister. What I am saying is that we are the one who is going to improve your life, army, economy and your responsibilities. You're unfit for that. The General will guide you through the process. By the way, I am really happy that you mentioned the joining first. I would have occupied your country otherwise. It is a disaster, militarily zero, but strategically an excellent place. Good weather too. Ancient Greek territories you said? You don't even speak the language of Plato; the people are very different from the ancient Greeks. Your country is Slavic mostly, lazy and not even resembles the Spartans or Thebans, nor the country of philosophers. But it will, in time it will. Now enjoy the party, gentlemen, in one week come to me with the signed documents. The General stays with you now if you have questions. He has unconditional power to negotiate. I advise you not to try his limits by saying no too often. His staff will look into your state of affairs, and I want you to make everything available for them. Greece will be great and rich again in the Confederation.

- Sir, the Italians are in that saloon. They are very interested in Libya, but not that much interested in the joining to the Confederation. A map of Africa is on the wall.

- Let's go then, General. It will be a real challenge... Ah, gentlemen, excuse me for keeping you from more important things, like drinking wine and chatting with ladies, but sometimes politicians have to do some politics too. How did you like the signing of the treaties? Very interesting, isn't it? Historical justice has to be served sooner or later. How can I help you?

- Sir, the General mentioned something about Libya and Tunisia.

- Did he? We don't really go by the names of the countries anymore. As you probably know, Mauritania, Western-Sahara, Mali, Algeria, Morocco, Senegal, Guinea-Bissau, Niger, Chad, Libya, Tunisia, and just recently Egypt and both Sudan has signed the joining documents. We just call that territory North-Africa. There are no boundaries anymore. As you can see on the map, all that big piece of almost empty land is one colour now. And it is not the end of it. Very soon other countries will be joining the Confederation. Too bad, that territory is almost uninhabited and deserted. But I have other problems now, for example the Adriatic Sea. Because I kindly asked the President of the USA, he has done a great favour to me. He left the whole Mediterranean. He has no interest here anymore, but I do have. I want the Adriatic to become the inland sea of the Confederation. My only problem is Italy. The Confederation has this very big African land, so Italy could have as much of it as she can handle and govern. In exchange I give you the privilege to ask me nicely to join the Confederation, of course.

- And give up our liberty.

- Italy gave up her liberty all right when joined the European Union. That is a real bureaucratic cancer ever created. Maybe the UN can be compared with it. With the Confederation, Italy would gain her liberty. Italy will have much better monetary system, higher standard of living, more territory and blooming economy. Forget about thinking in country; think instead about the people, they are much more important than the day to day struggle of pity political games of yours. I tell you something, gentlemen. You fly home from here without signing the preliminary joining documents, and at the airport the people will massacre you all, will elect a new government, which new government will sign those papers immediately. Italy changes governments like people change underwear. It is that easy. My power is almost unlimited in this field. You, gentlemen can become heroes, or can become dead corpses very soon. But I want Italy in the Confederation within a week. The General will take care of the details. Libya and Tunisia, and much more land will be yours, where you can deport those coloured foreigners of yours, whom you had to accept into Italy by the order of the EU and the UN. That was the real infringement on your liberty. The Italian people don't like those strangers, and they will hold you in their hart like heroes, and there won't be any more elections, I promise. It's time to be great again. Think about Rome. Think what you can do for your country.

The Greeks, the Italians and Malta have signed the documents. Italy deported her unwanted immigrants to Africa, the Greek army started to shape up to the standards, more African countries joined the Confederation, and the next step was a war with Turkey. Turkey by that time has lost half of her population, and militarily had no value. Once it was a world power, lately a medium power, now a country waiting to be taken by someone. Well, that someone just emerged as Saviour. Felix organized an uprising of the right-wing military nationalist, and they were on the verge of taking over the government. The leaders of that movement travelled to Budapest, and a very interesting agreement was formed between the Confederation and the future leaders of Turkey, who were ready to do anything for the power.

- By the time you go back home, the present government will be eliminated. You will have enough money to operate with. You start the incidents at the Bulgarian border, and we will retaliate. The exact plan is here in this dossier. We want the European part of Turkey and Asia Minor; let's say 300 km of the western part of Asia all the way from the north to south. In exchange you will gain territories in the east later. I want Istanbul without any damage. After the war we will have an agreement, and Turkey will join us. You will have a pure Turkish population. You send the undesirable elements to the frontline. You select your unwanted ones. Any questions, the General will handle the matter from here on. The whole operation can and has to be done in about one month. Prosperity follows immediately. If you find these conditions too harsh, you will be eliminated also, Turkey will be mine without any living soul there, or we just take it in a real war. I am offering you the best possibility there is. I hope you appreciate my friendliness. We had some history together, so we are closing the chapter right.

It was done in one month. Felix eliminated the government officials first. His team was very efficient in matters like this. The new government came to power with the help of the army. The war was fought mostly with Bulgarian and Greek soldiers, and both sides were commanded by the Staff Officers of the Confederation. The Turkish couldn't be trusted to do it

right. Some European territory became part of Bulgaria, and the Greek had some of Asia-Minor. Turkey became part of the Confederation after all. Istanbul was taken undamaged and empty. What happened next? Real wars needed in the course of history every time to forge Empires. To have free hand to proceed, America had to mind her own business at home, so she won't be able to intervene on the side of the enemies. Enemies are essential to create a real commonwealth. Forging the different people into one community, it is necessary to have common enemies to fight. America had her own problems. Racial, cultural variegation may look good in theory; that is, in the leftish liberal theory, but in practice it can and will demolish a community or country very effectively and surely. Heterogenic societies never lasted long. Felix's organization took care of the multiplication of the problems already existed in the USA. Some Spetsnaz and Special Forces help was called in for this manoeuvre.

Tijuana was the biggest border-crossing station in the world. A car-bomb exploded there, killing many and injuring much more. Arab terrorists' action, it was predicted and confirmed. From Mexico some Mexican troops fired shots at the American border-patrol, and they fired back, the local war became permanent, because for money those soldiers could be purchased. In Mexico, American citizens were found dead on the streets, in the USA cities Mexicans were murdered by whites and blacks. The gangs waged war on each other and on the police in the American metropolises. There was almost unlimited amount of all kinds of drugs on the streets. In many cities the electricity was cut down time after time by shooting the power-generator substation's transformers with destroyer ammo; the same was done in Hungary long ago. It requires days or weeks to replace those transformers, and takes a sniper about 5 minutes to destroy it again. Yeah, in the good old times they did just that in evening time. The team was ready all over the city, a good sniper shot the transformer, and there was no cameras, no light, only flashlight attached to the machine-gun, so the party was on. There was no TV, no internet, and no phones for long periods in different parts of the country. The civilians in America everywhere begged for the National Guard to intervene. It is unnecessary to list all of the atrocities, the main point is, America stepped back to the stone-age, it was on the verge of civilian war before, every race and every nationality looked at each other as enemies. So it was escalated to a full-scale multi-sided bloody civilian war. The unprepared authorities couldn't do much without electricity, and because of the magnitude of the upheaval. The stores looted, the gun shops robbed, nobody defended the rich people. The stupidity of the ideology of the equality finally became obvious to all. Everybody had to choose side; alone each one was just a sitting duck for some gang or race. It is always the same in times like this, when one cannot watch soap-operas and in real danger. It was the same in Hungary when he advanced the fighting to national level. The fat coach-potatoes had to get up finally. The main thing is, America was occupied minding her grave interior problems for a long time to come, and unable to intervene in international affairs and politics, hopefully.

America securely in quarantine politically, the Russian Army started the great expansion in three fronts. In the first round two army-groups invaded Kazakhstan. It was a big country, but her army almost non-existent, the country sparsely populated, so it was no match for the best fighting force on Earth. In two weeks' time it was overtaken by the fighters and occupied by secondary forces. Almost at the same time Mongolia was overtaken and occupied by the third

army-group. China was ensured that her territory is not wanted, and no need for any mobilisation. Instead, China delivered the clothes and other supplies for the Russian armies in Asia. One of the two army-groups which fought in Kazakhstan turned west, and opened the front against Georgia, Azerbaijan and Armenia. They finished with those countries in two weeks' time. The other army-group opened another front and occupied Uzbekistan, Turkmenistan, Kyrgyzstan and Tajikistan. Iran was assured of her territorial integrity, and didn't mobilise. So in about one month Russia occupied the whole territory of the old Soviet Union and Mongolia. The Commander of the Russian Army became the hero of the people and the soldiers. The Russians suffered major crisis before, losing the world-power status, so now they regained that dream, and whoever made it possible for them, looked at him as some God.

In the same time the forces of the Confederation, deploying the airborne divisions, seized the countries of the Persian-Gulf. It was discovered that many of the terrorist organizations were hiding and received their trainings in the countries of the Arab-Peninsula. Israel was especially hard hit by those terrorists. So in Budapest, before the action started, it was decided between the Confederation and Israel that a war will be waged on the countries involved in order to demolish terrorism once and for all.

- Israel can triple or quadruple her territory. We need to keep the USA out of this affair for sure. It will be your task. They are very busy now with some major interior problems, but one never can be sure enough. The Israeli army will fight against Syria and Jordan from the west. We help you from the north and from the east. Israel will occupy Damascus and Amman, and annex the territory around it and more to keep. If America intervenes, our deal is off.

- Don't worry about the Americans, Sir. We are the masters of America. The Congress is an Israel-occupied territory, as they say there. What they do not know, it is a truism.

- I do know that it is true. Uri Avenim, one of your politician said once, and I quote: "One thing, however, is quite clear: Israel is not the 51st state of the United States of America, as some would like to think; rather, the US Congress is one of the occupied areas of Israel." That is the reason I asked you, gentlemen, to keep the Americans in bay. I know everything about your affairs, past and present. You can tell them we occupy those states, so the Russians can't. Make it like we are against Russia, so the USA won't be nervous too much. The rules of the Geneva-Convention will not apply in this coming war. We have an agreement, gentlemen. We draw the map after the war. Until then, fight with extreme prejudice. Do not take prisoners. Your army is good enough for the task.

So when the Russian armies started the expansion of Russia, the forces of the Confederation and Israel started the joint war on terrorism. From Turkey, from Israel, from Egypt and from the air and the sea, Lebanon, Jordan, Syria, Saudi-Arabia, Yemen, Oman, and the little emirates of the Persian-Gulf were subjugated. First, airborne divisions occupied the centres of the capital cities, captured the leaders, and made them sign the joining documents to the Confederation, so every additional occupational fighting was legitimized. Israel did have some heavy fighting against the Arabs for Amman and Damascus. The whole operation was over in about one month. During the fights the oil-flow wasn't interrupted, and the price of the oil has been lowered a little. The interest of America wasn't infringed upon. After the month-long fighting Iraq mobilised her forces, and made the fatal mistake of exhibition of force against the Confederate forces. The answer for this show was prompt and merciless. The Russians and the

Confederation together within two weeks' time completely destroyed the Iraqi army, and the Confederation's forces occupied the country. Afghanistan was very hard-hit by the plaque, and the Russian sanitary forces helped the population. Afghanistan asked Russia for help, and became the territory of Russia. With this the fighting ended everywhere and the consolidation became necessary. It was going on continuously. The occupation of the oil-producing countries was perfectly justified by the rational mind. Besides being Muslims, which is the religion of conquest by any means, so producing terrorists all over the world, those people lived on the oil under their land, thinking it is only theirs. No, it isn't so; it could have been so far, but the new thinking won't accept the idiocies of the past. The oil belongs to the people of the whole world, and the Arabs sold it for very high price, so they could live on the fat of others, didn't work, didn't want to work, unable to think, they were a lowly race anyway, and they financed the terrorists, all these because they were lucky enough to have oil underneath them. The new political thinking is different from the old. Energy being essential, it should and ought to be owned by the producing people, not to the lazy, who built ice-skating stadiums in the 50° Celsius hot desert for fun and did perfectly useless luxury idiocies like driving 200 thousand \$ worth of Rolls-Royces in the sand, building sky-scrappers with no use, making artificial islands and stadiums for nobody, etc., all from the profit of the oil, from the work of the western productive people. Well, their time has come to the end. New thinking, new politics, the power-political practice of the rational and scientific society came to the rescue of the sane world, delivering the wrath of Allah finally. The Army and Felix made sure they went to heaven to meet their 777 or so virgins, so couldn't possibly complain about their fate. They soon became extinct; their gold, bank-deposits and the state bonds of other countries they held went to the Confederation. The whole region was renamed soon Arabia, Mesopotamia, Assyria, etc. Enough is enough for the thinking, creating people; it had to be done. At last Saint George killed the Serpent. The oil-field was occupied and run by the army. In this war the Army Chief of Staff was the adjutant General from the Frunze. His conduct was superb.

Then we come the month of October, in the second year of the establishment of the Confederation. The High Council of the Confederation was in session.

- Gentlemen, we have convened to discuss some very important questions. The Confederation multiplied in size and resources many times over, and the original political frame is not sufficient anymore. We are the originators of the Confederation, old friends and old comrades. I think it will be much better if the political frame would be transformed into an Empire. I have had a talk with the President of Russia, and we are in agreement that Russia would be better governed within the framework of an empire also. We both grew too big. So if you all agree, we will dissolve, disband this Confederation, and we decide that on the Christmas Day an Empire will be established in its place. For this we need an Emperor. But because of our cultural background, we'll rather call the Emperor as Great King. The point is the same. First let's decide on the dissolution of the Confederation and on the establishment of the Empire or Great Kingdom. Speak up, my friends.

- It is a necessity. Poland seconds the move.

- I think we all have to agree with it.

- Against it? Nobody. So ordained. On Christmas Day, the 25<sup>th</sup> of December the Confederation will dissolve itself, and transforms into an Empire, or Great Kingdom. Of course you all will keep your positions as Presidents of your countries. Honorary presidents you will be, that is. Well, comrades, who's going to be the Great King? This is the question. We have to decide on it now. We won't publish the change until the middle of December.

- Why not yourself? You don't want to be Great King?

- No. I am too old, too tired, and we need a young, energetic man with great popularity.

- The Commander of the Army. He is bright, young, energetic, intelligent, respected, and he did all the hard work to enlarge this Confederation. The soldiers love him. The people love him. He is a hero of the people everywhere in the Confederation.

- There is no better choice, if you don't want the job.

- Against it? Nobody. So ordained. We have the Great King then. Basically there are no other problems to discuss. The logistics is in place everywhere, the people are rich and happy, and I think we have done a great job. And it is not finished yet. The best is yet to come, comrades.

- The population really is happy. No crimes, no joblessness, plenty of food almost free, high wages, and the people respect the leaders and each other. The consolidation of the new territories gives everybody enough work. With the IQ-system they know their place in society.

- Are we going to sit around, no celebration? Here comes the food and wine. Comrades, this one is for the Confederation. And the next one is for the Empire.

- So, tell us, what have the Russians decided for the change?

- Well, now that you're asking, I'll tell you. But it is a state secret for a while...

The celebration was long and exhausting. Old memories, old stories, one after another.

(- OK. I had just about enough. So the people were happy, you decided on the Empire, everywhere in the occupied territories the organization was in progress, Africa almost died out, and finally the whole Continent became your territory. The Negroes and Arabs who stayed alive were good workers, but they couldn't have babies. The Russians had the same problems with the Arabs and other races, but the vaccinations and implantations made sure the living non-whites couldn't multiply, but they lived well. So what happened between the Council's decision and Christmas?

- Work, work, and more work. I wanted Scandinavia. After Helsinki, the Baltic-States, such us Latvia, Lithuania and Estonia were asked, which side they would like to belong to. They had no other choice, but choose between Russia and the Confederation. They came to us. It is good and nice, but I needed more brain, more northern genes. The Balkan was not really a place to recruit engineers. So in the middle of November I asked the Norwegian ambassador to come and visit me for breakfast. One of my adjutants General was there with us too.)

- Sir, you wanted to see me?

- Yes, Mr Ambassador, please have breakfast with me. I am afraid your visit has no relevance anymore. You see, we've solved the problem. Well, I tell you anyway. This was the problem.

- That is a cigarette lighter, Sir. How could it possibly be my problem if I may ask?

- Not only a common lighter but platinum with diamonds. And it is rare, because it uses gasoline. Not gas. It didn't work in the morning. I like good cigars. So I have many intelligent engineers here, and they examined the problem, and they found out that there is no gasoline

in it. So I asked the General, who has gasoline in Europe. He told me that Norway has a lot. So I have sent the Master-sergeant for you. No importance anymore, because the problem has been eliminated. Sorry for bringing you here. At least we can have breakfast together. The jam is very fine. They make it especially for me. Do you like eggs? We have two- and three-minutes boiled eggs. They are very fresh. Those are today's productions, guarantied.

- Thank you, but I still don't understand, with all due respect, Sir.

- The jam is made without preservatives just for me by an old comrade of mine in Transsylvania. I fancy jams; I have many kinds. The two-minute egg is little rare. I like the three-minute eggs better or somewhere in between is best. What was it you don't understand?

- The lighter. How could it be possibly my business? The jam is really excellent, Sir.

- Forget about it, Ambassador. I just wanted to borrow some gasoline. Listen, I told these people many times to give me a pension, let me go somewhere quiet. This job isn't for me. I am not really capable to carry out the duties. But no, they don't want me to go. The ham is made especially for me. It is very fine, very good, and very expensive. Have some of it.

- Yes, indeed, it is very good, Sir, excellent ham. So, finally your engineers have fixed the lighter. I am very happy to hear that, Sir. Very informative meeting, I would say. That is what ambassadors are for nowadays, I guess.

- You haven't heard the point of the story yet. The General told me later that now we own the largest portion of the oil on the face of the Earth. I just don't follow which parts of the world we've occupied already. It changes so fast, you know, I'm just not up to date in these matters. So I said what if we lowered the price of the oil? I like to make the people happy and satisfied to drive their automobile cheaper. Then the Norwegians would be out of the oil business, he said. The major part of the revenue of Norway comes from the oil they pump out with great expenditure from the bottom of the Northern Sea, while they pollute the water. If I lowered the price, it would be uneconomical to get the oil from the bed of the Sea. Then you could go back to the fishing business, which isn't that good business today, because you and the others killed off the fishes, so we have to take care of it later, when we finally will have time for real matters to solve. So then all of your engineers would come to me and beg for work. I am generous. I'll give you exactly two weeks to confirm that you want to join the Confederation, or I lower the price of the oil, and Norway will be poor again, and the leaders will be massacred when I tell the Norwegian people that their leaders are selfish and doing wrong to them purposely, just to stay in office for a little longer. Well, that is major point of the tale of my lighter. Well, you are not so cheerful now, Mr Ambassador. The General will handle you the documents in question to sign. You take them home, give them to the Prime Minister and even your king can keep his title. If those documents are not signed within a reasonable time, I will take Norway by force; or rather I'll let the people change the government for another one, which will sign those papers. I hope you find the ham still excellent. In those documents you'll discover that I'll give you one third of Albania and some Greek islands, so the Norwegians will have some really inhabitable place to live in. It is a little cold up there, isn't it, Mr Ambassador? Well, we are in the business to solve problems for long time, not only on the day by day basis as it was fashionable so far. Your present government isn't too popular as I heard, letting those blacks and others into the country. Well, the leaders can become hero or dead. There is no other choice. The jam, try this one, it is excellent. Like some more coffee?

You have time to read through those papers. The airplane is being fuelled now, and you go by helicopter to the airport with the General, and home. Have some more jam, coffee, and read.

(- The next day you have had some chat with the Swedish Ambassador. They've got two weeks to join as well, or else. Iceland joined after them soon.

- And those countries had signed the documents in ten days. They could see how the Finnish have prospered, working 5-6 hours a day, paid almost no tax, the standard of living doubled, while they worked 8-9 hours, paid half of their salary on taxes, their country loaded full with blacks, Arabs, and the hell knows what other races, and there was some agitation among the nationalists by Felix. So if they didn't sign, the people or our teams would have killed those leaders. It was decided already, and the leaders knew it. The problem is always the same with the elected officials. They are brainless. They are elected by the masses from the average. We never had elections, and we always had the very best people in the right places. But we can discuss it later. So the whole of Scandinavia was mine. The Confederation had been a great success. The northern brain everywhere became the managers, the engineers, the leaders. Everything went smoothly. The Swedish and the Norwegians and the Finnish got a big chunk of Albania and some islands, so their genes could change the Balkan once and for all in time.

- So what happened around Christmas?

- Well, the Commander of the Army and Major General Jadwiga came to me for a permit.)

- So the Commanding General of the Armies and the Major General want to get married. Well, for that you really need my permission. But I cannot give you my permission.

- May I ask you, Sir, why not?

- Instead I give you an order. You're ordered to get married on the 24<sup>th</sup> of this month on the expense of the State, organized by the protocol. That is the day before Christmas. But there will be no honeymoon. Not one day, sorry to say that. Christmas is work-day for you.

- May I ask you, Sir, the reason?

- Because on the next day there will be a ceremony. The Confederation has been dissolved, and soon I'll tell this fact to the people of the world. We are no more as of midnight the 25<sup>th</sup> of December. It is finished. It was good, but that is the end of it. We don't need it any more.

- But how, Sir, why has it been dissolved? And what will happen? It just cannot be after all.

- Oh, yes, Jadwiga, it can be, and will be. It has been decided already. So after I declare the Confederation dissolved, I also pronounce the Empire in its place. The ceremony I mentioned will be the coronation of the Great King of the Eastern Empire, or Great Kingdom. We decide on the name later. And you both definitely have to be there. And the reason is that your husband's head will be under the crown. He will be the Great King. You, Jadwiga, also will be crowned Queen. A little water helps that fainting, Jadwiga. Kate, don't laugh, because on the 5<sup>th</sup> of January you will marry the Commander of the Russian Army in Moscow, and on the 6<sup>th</sup> you two will be crowned the Tsar and Tsarina of the Russian Empire. Now you're not laughing. I told you I'll find a good job for you. Feodor is coming here now; here he is, so the ladies are dismissed, because I'll have some serious talk with the gentlemen. Ladies, see the protocol for the arraignments and procedure. They are working on it for long enough now.

They had a serious talk indeed. Then the days were spent with the formation of the empires, with the press, TV, but that was the job of the protocol. He never liked to be on TV. Instead, on the 23<sup>rd</sup> of December he decided to visit the Casino in Budapest. And that decision has changed history. Sometimes very small things have big impact. But we know it only after they became big impacts.

- Master-sergeant, this is the best game ever invented. Craps. Originated by the Chinese, but developed by the Americans in Las Vegas, where I have spent enough time and make a living by playing poker. Ok, dealer, place me 640 across, working on the come-out. And here is 100 on the Don't pass. I will also have permanent bet for 100 on the Don't come, even if I forget to place it. Am I understood? Here is a 300 bet for the dealers, your choice.
- Thank you, Sir. How do you want the 640 to be placed?
- I said across, it is a classic, and it should be very obvious for a dealer.
- He wants 100 on the 4, 5, 9, 10, and 120 on the 6 and 8, even if it's a very stupid bet.
- And how would you like to be beaten for that, young man?
- No need for violence my friend, he is right. I supposed to buy the 4 and 10. He is right.
- 5, no field 5. Good. Press the Nina from Carolina. Here is 100 for the Don't come bet.
- How do you want to press the 9, Sir?
- It is very easy, dealer, just take the 100 bet from front of the 5 after you paid him 140, and place it on the 9, so on the 9 he will have 200. Where do they teach these dealers nowadays?
- 6, big 6. Press the 8.
- The payoff is 120, dealer. It is very unusual to press the 8, but it is his money.
- 9. Centerfield 9. Now he was right to press 9. He didn't put on the Don't come, but he has a permanent bet there, dealer. He is playing the Don't side. It is quite uncommon, because high intelligence needed for that, and the thorough knowledge of the game. Not many people understand craps. I am out of money. Want to loan me some? We split if I win.
- You have a watch, digital watch, 6 digit face, and American system. All of the fours are missing; the watch doesn't count that. How much will it advance, compared with a regular watch? And forget the hour in the second place. I'll give 500 for a prompt answer.
- Take the place bets off. It is 15 missing both places, the seconds and the minutes, which is  $\frac{3}{4}$  times  $\frac{3}{4}$ , equals  $9/16$ , so  $7/16$  of a day is the answer not counting the one four in the hour's place which is 45 times 45 seconds. Easy money, man, just have to switch over from the 60 minutes and 60 seconds system to the 45 minutes and 45 seconds system. That is the point of the puzzle. Take his place bets off, dealer. I mean if you don't want to lose of course.
- Yeah, do it, dealer. Here is the 500. Good brain you have, young man. Nobody knew the answer for switching systems, believe it or not. Where are you from?
- 7. I told you to take your place bets off. You finally did something right. I am Finnish.
- Milk headed. Young man, one more not fully respectful word, and I'm gonna teach you a lesson you never forget. Who do you think you talking to like this?
- OK. I thank your boss for the money. I apologize. And you wouldn't hit a girl, would you now? Yes, short hair, and suit, but if you look a little closer, you will find out, I am a girl.
- And a very bright one. What would you say if I offered you a job?
- Depends. No sex. I myself like girls better. If you can't live with that, forget it. I am not even 18 yet. So what did you say, what kind of job is that? And how much does it pay?

- Kind of a personal secretary, adviser, later you can be whatever you want to be, if you're fit for it. The salary, I don't know. I am thinking of giving you a credit card, and it's up to you, how much you spend. I won't check. As to the qualification, tell me something. Spinoza had used an illustration for certainty, the example of the triangles. Can you recall what it was?
- You mean something is sure as the sum of the angles of the triangle totals 180 degrees?
- Exactly. Would he revise his statement after Gauss, Lobachevski, Bolyai and Riemann?
- Meaning Spinoza knows everything, right? The hyperbolic and the spherical geometry. I was thrown out of the classroom for it. The teacher said the triangles can have less and more than 180 degrees sum of their angles after the non-Euclidian geometry. I said it is as idiotic as anything can be. If you measure the triangles drawn on a hyperbolic surface with a theodolite which is calibrated for flat surface, of course you get a different number. But the theodolite itself must be in the same system as the triangle you measure it with. It is my problem; I always realize how blunt the learned intelligent people can be in reality, when it comes to real thinking. They don't actually think for themselves, they just memorize what somebody long time ago told them as truth, and they're too busy repeating it, unable to revise or even understand those so-called truths. So the example of Spinoza is as valid today as was in the age of the Euclidean geometry. Just have to use the correct measurements, not to mix the surfaces between triangles and theodolites. The President, he has a good mind for the system-analysis.
- It is good to know you actually can admire somebody. I admire Spinoza for one, and Schelling, Soddy, Fichte and couple of more great thinkers. I like to discover their logic.
- You know, it is interesting. Did they tell you that you look like the President? Well, almost.
- Yes, I am aware of that. I could double him even. Do you have some place to stay tonight?
- No, not really. I have one, but nothing much I couldn't leave in a minute. Your offer is?
- You can come with us now; we pick up your things. I'll have an accommodation for you.
- Well, why not? I had enough of the Casino for today. They'll throw me out soon anyway not being 18 yet. When I lose they don't care, only when I win they recall what the law is.

The closer they drove to the Castle, the more thinking she became. At the gate when the guards saluted the Man, finally realised who she was talking to, and who He was. In the office she apologized again for being so cocky.

- No need for that, young man. Because you are a man, aren't you? Let me see you. 182 cm, small tits, can be hidden. Show your behind. Well, almost perfect for a man. Take your clothes off if you are not shy. Perfect. Turn around. Fine, dress up. You see, my entire adjutant Generals is busy and I need a bright young man for an aide. Have you ever done IQ-test?
- Yes, Sir, many times. They said I was cheating.
- You cannot cheat this one. Do it now. You have two hours to complete. Tell me something about yourself; parents, childhood, schooling, etc.
- Well, I am an orphan. But my adopting parents didn't care too much about me, so I grew up in a library. The only quiet place there was the section of philosophy. So Spinoza, Schelling, Kant, Hegel, Kierkegaard, you name it, I've read it. Then I discovered my strange affection, yearning for girls. I have to tell you, because I just can't have enough of them. If it's all right, I happily serve you, although I don't really understand why, because the Confederation will be dissolved soon, and you will be without a job yourself. Or maybe I am mistaken on that one? Please explain.

- We are going to create an officers' class of some special kind. It will be a very highly educated and very smart class, the cream of the crème, governors of the world. We will have a job, don't worry about it. Just concentrate on the test now. I watch TV, the great game of snooker. Now, that is worth watching while you work on the test...

- OK, I am ready.

- You can sleep there, that's the guest-room. Tomorrow we'll find some better place.

- Thank you, Sir. Good night.

Next morning the Master-sergeant took her to the coiffeurs to fashion a military-like haircut. Then he took her to the HR to get her into the staff officially, by a man-name. Then she went to the tailors to have a uniform temporarily, while they make sets tailored for her. The new uniform was extremely nice, and in many ways different from the uniforms of the regular army. Then they went back to the office.

- Now, we have a fine young officer here, Master-sergeant. Bring him the new insignia of the Lieutenant for starter. From now on she is a He. Well, I don't know what to say, but you surely passed the IQ-test yesterday with maximum. It is 200. Congratulations. Today is a big day. Andreas and Jadwiga are getting married, and the whole fricken world will be here. Not everybody, but close enough. But tomorrow surely the whole world will be here for the coronation. It is almost time to go. So put the rank of Lieutenant on, Master-sergeant, this one is a new kind, looks good on you. Your new quarter is the guest-suite. We won't be here too long anyway. This Castle belongs to the Great King. OK, go, refresh yourself, and we go in half an hour. And put sunglasses on. Your emerald eyes are very feminine. You will find a dozen in your room. Master-sergeant, you will train him in martial-arts, killing technics, shooting and weightlifting. No mercy given, no excuses accepted. Be cruel to the milk-headed.

The marriage ceremony was not an affair of the state, but many statesmen were present. Their wives wanted to show up mostly. So it really looked like an official ceremony. That evening they had a small party, dinner, dance, and no politics. But of course the Heads of States were invited with their wives. The next day was the spectacular coronation of the Great King and Queen, free food for the people in every city; the TV was present and broadcasted the ceremony. Started at 12, lasted 3 hours, then the Royal Highnesses in a six-horse carriage or rather coach drove around the city, and as it was the custom long ago, threw specially made coins amidst the people. Then everybody went to his or her quarters, and prepared for the evening party. In the office the Lieutenant received his ID, credit card with no limits, and they chatted away the time. He was asked what the next logical step would be, and the answer was very satisfactory. Then he told the Lieutenant how it will be, what is the future, and why it is absolutely the one and only possibility. They discussed it for a long time.

- You have read my books. So you know what I want is the most perfect society, where the possibility of the antagonism is minimised. And for doing that, science is the key. We make up the morals; we do not just follow the inherited rules and regulations. That uniform you are wearing is the sign of the coming times. Whoever wears that uniform is working for mankind or humanity. Not for a temporary state or nation, not for a person, but for the advance of humanity in general. I have a plan. OK, Custer had a plan too, I'm aware of that. But we also

have time to revise the plan, make it better, and adjust to the state of affairs. But the final destination is clear. And only you and I know that destination, and I don't see why anybody else should be involved in it now. We keep it on the need to know basis. Later some will know. Much later, everybody will know. But right now, it is a very delicate matter. Many people wouldn't accept it today; some would even turn against us. The time is not ripe yet and this matter isn't open for any kind of debate. It is a must, not negotiable, and that is what we're going to achieve at any cost. Every political manoeuvre served and serves that end. It means it is the two of us against the whole world now. We'll progress slowly, one step at a time.

- Understood, Sir perfectly understood. I have a personal question. Very delicately put, how on Earth will I get a girl into my bed, if I am an officer of high moral standards, living here?

- Two more weeks. Here, you can't. For the next two weeks you are doing it yourself. Then we will have a solution. Very satisfactory solution we are going to have for your problem.

- Because I get so aroused sexually when we talk or I think about high politics, that it is killing me. So if you excuse me, Sir, I have to do what girls have to do when aroused and lonely. I'll be calm and cool and very officer-like for the party. But now, it is time for calming me down couple of times.

- OK, Lieutenant, dismissed. I like the straight talking. Off you go. Have a nice time.

(- OK. It won't be necessary to go into the details of the coronation ceremony. What is more interesting, is the party after. So the coronation started at noon, ended at 3, and the newly created Lieutenant was there with you, the whole fricken world of high politics was present, what else is there for the record?

- The Generals, all five of them, advanced to the rank of Lieutenant General, three stars. They deserved it. The logistics was in place, the diplomatic relations with the West in perfect order. Actually, the West depended upon us so much, that General was the practical leader of the West. Everybody went to him when in trouble or had problems with each other. He even had a permanent office in Aachen with a staff of specialists from every field. He could call on Felix if something had to be solved fast and he had no time and patience to argue. Again, the paradox of the elected officials comes before us. You see, the elected leader thinks he has nothing to do. I rephrase this. The strategy of the bureaucrat is not to do anything. Because when they do something, it could go wrong, and that will be their fault. If they don't do anything, and if something goes wrong, the blunder is dissipated, divided amongst the bureaucracy, so no personal liability, responsibility will be assigned to one person. So they try to look busy all the time, doing nothing. We demolished this system, but the West was in the captivity of the old idiocy. We also had one of the Generals in America as liaison officer. He has done an excellent job calming down those hotheads. America got used to her power; and now that this influence evaporated, she had to mind her own business at home. The skeletons started to fall out of the closet. Slowly but surely America realized that Monroe was right, the leftish neoliberalism doesn't go anywhere but backwards, so it was a new political string the USA had to know and follow through. The General implanted our system as far as he could go with it. Another General needed to take over the armies, since with the coronation the Commander had other things to do, naturally. The General from the Frunze Academy acquired the job. The best choice we had. He also served in the French Foreign Legion as a youngster, a real soldier he was. He was about to take command of the Russian Army as well,

since the coronation of Feodor was just around the corner, and he'll have other duties of course. The General in charge of other matters went wherever he or the diplomatic power of the State needed, mostly in China, Japan, India, Australia, all over the world. They all had their own staff, and everything went smoothly. They were not bureaucrats, but thinkers and doers; all of them had their own airplane stuffed with the best communication, basically flying hotels and office. But let's go back to the evening party after the coronation.)

- Mr President, if we can call you by that title, what's the next step? Are you still holding any office now?

- Today I am still President. The Confederation dissolves at midnight today. So, gentlemen, how are you doing? If my information is correct you are doing well, your economy is booming, thanks to us. We could place orders elsewhere, and at that moment your boom is history. But I want the West healthy and strong. What happens tomorrow is another question. Maybe I get an office somewhere, maybe retire, but today I still have the power to negotiate. And my pocket is filled with offers. As you know, almost the whole continent of Africa is mine. All without borders, clean title, cleaned out, basically only animals and jungle, and full of deserted mines, cities and villages. We can't handle it. So I was thinking of giving some of it to the West. France, Belgium, England, Spain, Portugal, Germany, all had their land and colony there a century ago. The whole western half could be yours, gentlemen. Not everything, because we want the major part of Africa as it should be, international territory, wilderness. But the cities, the factories, the mines, the inhabitable parts can be yours without charge. I can detect some interest. Very well. The General here will answer your questions; he is in charge of the distribution of West-Africa as well as in every other of your affairs with us.

- You didn't mention the Netherlands, dear President.



- Beautiful Queen of Holland. It is because you never had any colony in Africa. The South-African Boer Republic was not a Dutch colony. But please, come with me, we have something to talk about... OK, it is better. My dear Queen, I want the new Boer Republic on the eastern side of Africa, where it was before, but much bigger. That is the land of the Great King. And it is still a secret, so do not mention it to nobody. Indonesia is your other territory.

- I am very glad to hear that, Mr President. I am sure we will have an agreement, although it is hard to imagine that in the present situation. And who is this fine young officer with so blonde hair that it is almost white? And a very attractive uniform he has, I would say. I bet there is a sweet little secret hidden somewhere down there. Am I right or I am right?

- Why don't you two get acquainted a little better? He is the future. Go, Lieutenant, you have to know everybody sooner or later. So start it now with the Queen. She can give you some inside stories about the players of the high aristocracy. Gossips are important to know.

(- Yeah, she looked pretty good. OK, continue, sorry.)

At that time he had the microphone in his ears, and could communicate to the logistic team.

(- I have a strange feeling. The Queen is 30, and beautiful. Not married, never been. What do we know about her? Has she been in psychiatric treatment, maybe lesbian? Dig, and dig fast.

- Yes, Sir. One moment...She has been treated, no men in her life, and lesbianism possible.

- Then to make sure the possibility, could we do something about to please her? Do it tonight, very discretely. Do we have resources of this kind?

- Yes, Sir, we can even double the pleasure. Consider it done. She will be taken care of.

- Atta boys.)

- Well, Boss, this Queen is a lesbian or rather a bisexual with very strong lesbian urges.

- So you two understand each other well. Very good. Tonight she won't be alone.

- Sir, I have an idea. About the topics we were discussing yesterday. But it is too long. The main point is you have sent a fleet to Madagascar to clean out and occupy. That is the last country in Africa which has signed the joining documents, so it is yours. Do you have any idea, Sir, how many per cent of the girls are bisexual or lesbian in reality?

- Tell me. A wild guess would be, say 7%.

- You can easily put a zero to it. The Asians are almost all bisexuals. In the whore-houses of Thailand any girl can go in and choose any one of those girls and they are happy to have sex with girls. The white girls are wild. Just let them be among themselves, you going to see a sexual orgy very soon. Have you ever been in a female prison? They're all doing it and happily, freely. And it doesn't really matter what they say publicly. So what if we created a symbolic kingdom of the females? Madagascar would be a perfect location, and the Queen of Holland would be the perfect choice for the Queen of Madagascar. Right across on the Continent would be a Boer Republic, what is Mozambique, Zambia, that area. Africa is nice, but what we need is not monkeys and giraffes, but meat. Great hordes of beef are what we really need. Grand-scale agriculture, millions of hectares of machine-worked cereal-fields is what we need to solve the food problem. Exotic animals are needed as well, although telling you the truth I don't see why. But some say we need that useless zoo, so let it be too on the side.

- If I understand you right, you want Madagascar completely free of the people still living there, and want a kingdom for girls only, where they can come and go whenever they feel like it, and you want the Queen of Holland to be the Queen of Madagascar, symbolically the Queen of all the females. The airport there needs to be renewed. Did you hear it, boys?

(- Clear and clean, Sir. Your word is, Sir?

- Go ahead with that. Send the proper orders to the fleet to clean that island thoroughly.)

- I would rescue the young nice girls also from every part of the world and take them to Madagascar or Africa too.

(- We're working on that one already by the order of the SD long time. It is in progress.)

- Great advice, Lieutenant, will do. Well, Lieutenant, that's how we operate here. Now, it is your job to secure the agreement of the Queen for the plan. Go; play in the big theatre of high politics. Wet your feet as they say. Soon you have to do it without someone watching over.

- Yeah, from the outside it's so easy to criticise, now I see the inside of it. I love it already.

- General, let the Japanese and the Koreans know that the eastern parts of the Russian Empire became available for development, and we would like them as close allies. Hints can be made about their past empire in China too. But it is a secret. After the 6<sup>th</sup> of January negotiations

can be started about their integration into the Russian Empire. Both countries suffered only 30 or 40% loss, mostly the elderly, so they can thank us for making them stronger this way. They are good workers, good engineers. I hope the superiority they felt over the white men is gone; they have to know their place. Now they can have their history back. The Emperor of Japan may retain his title. We need soldiers, ships from both countries. They have to fight.

- Very well, Sir. It would go smoothly. They were already asking questions in this direction. Sir, more than half of China has been died out in the plaque. Actually they suffered many plaques. The western region is unpopulated basically. Felix hit that part very hard.

- You're suggesting offering them a helping hand by taking over those territories? All right, Russia can do that. Xinjiang, Tibet, Qinghai, Gansu, and Neimongol provinces they can take over to administer for now; it will be theirs anyway later. They can handle it down to the Himalayas. In exchange we can extinguish the plaque, and China will live. By the time we extinguish the plaque not more than 200 million remain alive, but they will live. Offer the high officials a serum and their families to move here now, so they'll surely survive. They have almost no army anymore. I want their nuclear arsenal to be handled over to us immediately as a must, a requisite, before we do anything for them. Go, get them, General.

(- Where is the new Commanding General of the Armies?

- Organizing at the armies, Sir. He has sent his congratulations, he has things to do, he said.

- Good boy. Taking charge of 300 divisions, selecting the commanding officers, staff, it's no small task. Half of the armies are doing the jobs of engineers and workers in the factories and oil fields all over the world until civilians fill up those positions fully.)

- Sir, the Queen is delighted. I hinted her that tonight she won't be lonely, so retired early.

- OK. Here are the Great King and Queen. Please accept my homage, Royal Highnesses.

- Ah, come on, Sir. And here is the new adjutant. A very good looking young man he is. Why don't you come with us, so we could introduce you to everybody in the High Society? I will tell you all the gossips about everybody. Come, my dear. Here comes Kate too. Now you're in really good hands. And your secret is safe with us. Excuse us, Sir. It's girls' business now.

- Is he or she really that smart, Sir?

- Even smarter. I cannot make a test any more difficult. Half of the smart guys can't make 120 points of the test. The maximum so far was 150. And this is a new, more difficult test, full of logic-tricks and science-traps with 200 points maximum. I think we've found who we have been searching for. Andreas, he is the one, or she; that is even better. Perfect. Where is the American? I see. He doesn't look too cheerful. But he can thank us for the law and order we restored in his country. Well, he doesn't even know who started it all. All they know is that our General there have restored their peace and order. Felix, the SD, Spetsnaz and the other Special Forces we have there they don't know about. OK, you have other things to do.

(- OK, this is boring. So you had the first coronation, discovered the chosen one, the Chinese gave Russia the western and Mongol provinces to administer, the combined armies of the Confederation and Russia had a new Commander, the Queen of Holland had her good night, and she accepted the title of Queen of Madagascar, symbolic kingdom of the females of the world, the peace in the USA had been restored, what else happened?

- Next day the Queen thanked me for the night, and stayed the whole two weeks, until the 5<sup>th</sup> of January. We became well acquainted to say the least; the truth is we spent the whole time

together. I just loved her, and we slept couple of times together. The Lieutenant was right again about her being bisexual. She also kept her female companions. She said she wanted a child from me, and I didn't say no. The Lieutenant, the Queen and I talked a lot. We had an agreement to establish a Nature Preservation Force, or NPF. It would be totally female army and personnel, responsible for the rain-forests, Amazonia, Africa's inside, the later conquered territories, and the Islands of the Pacific and other oceans. It has been decided; I called up Felix and ordered the logistics to organize the salvation of the nice young girls of Indochina and other parts of the world even in grander scale. Lots of ships and airplanes needed, but we had more than enough. The girls were taken to Madagascar, Africa, and later to Amazonia and to the islands. A secret was discovered by the urgings of the Lieutenant.)

- Sir, I have participated in a little experiment in the clinic. The working of the brain of the girls and boys is a fascinating story by itself, so I won't bore you with it. The point is that there is a little part of the brain, which is responsible for the sexual preference. The brain of the men is much more resistant, because of the testosterone. But the brain of the girls can very easily be manipulated by a little shock in the right place. We already shocked absolutely hetero girls, and they became bisexuals just like that. And their IQ went up 10 points in the average. They become smarter. They love everybody, have beautiful sex with both sexes, but they always prefer girls in the first place. Our first problem has been solved. Julie is fascinated. No worries about the social prejudice. Soon every girls and women will become bisexual, as natural for them. We only free their original mind from the bias of the society. They won't care, won't be ashamed any more. That is great. Only the girls, not the boys, of course.

- I am very happy that you have arrived at the conclusion we have been working on for years now. That clinic you went to has been established by me. But it is good to know that our thinking is the same. I am also very happy that you call the Queen, Julie. It means you are good friends. Yes, Lieutenant, the research of the brain has been successful in this very important field. We start the shock-therapy now. They won't even notice it. Welcome to the new world, Lieutenant. But now, we are going to Moscow for the second coronation. You have the portable variety of that shocking-equipment? You better bring it. Then it is up to you how you're going to use it amongst the women of the High Society.

- Darling, we already know. You can trust us with this. By the way, we're not coming back here, are we? Good. Jadwiga will be happy to have her own palace.

Moscow loved her Tsar and Tsarina. On the 5<sup>th</sup> of January they had their wedding and on the 6<sup>th</sup>, the coronation. It was monumental. The interesting part is the evening party after the coronation. Again, the whole world was there. High politics was decided at parties like this.

- So, Mister President, you are not President of anything for two weeks now. You were a worthy opponent. What's going to happen to you now? Will you get some back-office maybe? The young generation have taken over, haven't they? You can teach politics for sure. I invite you to lecture if you want anywhere in my country. The good old USA is still standing.

- Really, Sir, are you going to retire? The young tigers won't let you tell them what to do, that's for sure. That offer for Africa is still standing? The General gave us temporary license

to occupy some territories, we lease in reality, and we're occupying those now continuously. I guess we have to negotiate with the Great King in the future.

- Well, Gentlemen, I might be given some back-office job after all. Maybe they need some advice on something. But it is interesting, that you are all so worried about my future. I am old and tired. I'm thinking about buying a house somewhere and write my memoirs. Or I'll just lecture somewhere, or play poker, who knows?

- It will be a very interesting memoir, Sir, indeed. You actually started out all alone, and forged two great empires in no time. England needed centuries for that. I admire what you have achieved. Maybe luck has to do with it they say, but I don't believe in that.

- The point is, you have done your part, and now off you go. Major impact you had in high politics, I have to tell you that. You surely caused many big headaches for my government.

- Maybe I just chose my officers right, or it could be fate. Do you gentlemen know about history in depth? Sometimes I feel it repeats itself. Let's take the language. When the Turks occupied the Castle of Buda back in 1541, where America didn't built in one brick, the Hungarian became the language of diplomacy between the Turkish and the Hapsburg Empires. They didn't want to use each other's tongue, so they used Hungarian instead, for one and a half centuries. Now, Hungarian is an official language in the Empire of the Great King.

- Yes, it is an interesting story. This wine is surely excellent too.

- Even more interesting, that at that time the Hungarian nobility didn't really speak Hungarian. They spoke Latin. Latin was the official language of Hungary back then.

- Old history. The politics is different today.

- Maybe so, Mr President, maybe. Politics has its own laws, politics is about power, and nothing else, and that was true in ancient times and true today as well. The Eastern-Roman Empire was famous for the political games they played. There is a word in the English language as a reminder of that age. Byzantine is the word. I am sure the King of England can explain it to you, Mr President. Your countries are divided by the common language as Churchill said.

- Happy to do so, Sir. Byzantine means very complex political spider-web, the unknown next step in politics, making politics full of tricks and plans unknowable in advance. Devious, sophisticated, complex, secretive. Yeah, those bloody old boys knew something for sure.

- Thank you. That's exactly what it means. Well, good old times. I think history repeats itself.

- No, it doesn't. Admit it. You've been pushed aside, and now you're looking for excuses. That is the truth. They have the glory, the power and the country. Your time is up.

- Ladies and Gentlemen, the Great King of the Eastern Empire and the Tsar of the Russian Empire going to have an announcement. Please listen to them in due silence.

- This will be some protocol announcement. OK, listening.

- We, Andreas and Feodor, for the commonwealth, the safety and security of our people and Empires, hereby unite our armed forces, our finance, our foreign affairs, and we establish the High Council of the Empires. This Council has the power over the military, financial and foreign affairs of both empires, and every other matter it will judge important to decide upon at any time. The seat of the High Council is in the old Istanbul, or in her new old name, Byzantium. For the Presidency of the High Council we are petitioning the former Marshal and President of the High Council of the Confederation, to whom we'll award the one highest military rank of Generalissimo. We appeal to him to accept the Presidency and make a statement.

- Excuse me, gentlemen, I think they have just offered me some back-office job. I have to say something now... Andreas and Feodor, thank you for the offer. I hereby accept the Presidency of the High Council of the Empires. Every foreign power is required to have their embassies in Byzantium. The military power of the two Empires and the financial and foreign affairs, and every other matter the Council wants to take into consideration will be decided upon by the High Council when in session. The President has the same power when the High Council is not in session. The High Council has five members now, the crowned pairs with two votes together and the President with one vote and the right to veto. I also accept the rank of Generalissimo and with it the High Command of the Combined Armies. The Articles of the Incorporation will be published and sent to the foreign powers. I have spoken.

- So what does it mean now?

- It means, Mr President, that he is more powerful than ever before. He has the glory, the absolute power, and now two empires. Byzantium. It is unbelievable. He will swallow us all. Now we have to go to Byzantium if we want to take a breath. His united armed forces are unmatched. I love this guy. America is the past now, just became a second-rate power. Fortunately, Mr President, you have no word in the high politics anymore as much as you liked. I think the NATO is ancient history. We are out, as of now. Africa we want, that is the future.

- And Germany wants you to get the hell out of our country. You have two weeks to evacuate your military bases in Germany. We are getting out of the NATO. We need Africa instead.

- You have 10 days to evacuate your bases in France. Your presence is an obstacle in the dealing with the Empires. We are out of the NATO too. In fact, the NATO is dissolved. It is useless anymore. France also will have her African territories back instead.

- So, gentlemen, good to be back to the old friends. I don't think this back-office job will bore me. In the matter of Africa, the General has full power to negotiate. Mr President, would you come with me for a moment? Thank you. That General I have in America is an American citizen too. He is a West-Point graduate. He is my plenipotentiary ambassador in your country. If you listen to me or him, it is the same. So whenever you have a problem to solve you know where to go first and last. He can solve problems, and he can create problems. Don't try to provoke the latter. That is all, Mr President, for now, that is all I can tell you. Come and visit me in the new city soon. You're always welcome. I think it is time to get rid of the thermonuclear arsenal everywhere in the world. Be with me on that one. We talk it over soon.

- Darling, it was a grandiose performance. Telling you the truth, the Lieutenant was so taken by it, he couldn't help but had to perform a little cooling down on herself. The main thing is that in the meantime we've shocked everybody. We shocked the wives and daughters of the statesmen, the financial gurus, everybody present. Beauty-massage, we called that. They don't even know it yet. And here comes the Lieutenant, calmed down.

- I heard your chat with them. Then the surprise hit them. It was a gross performance, Sir.

- Yours or mine?

- Both, I would say. Well, a little chats with the elite and off we go to Byzantium. Two empires, the greatest military force the world has ever amassed; all the females in the world, infinite financial and brain resources, total power. We have all this for the benefit of mankind. I feel so good. It's unbelievable; I am one of the makers of history.

Next day they flew to Byzantium. It wasn't ready yet, probably never will be. The old buildings, the slums have been cleared away, many new houses, schools, and the Downtown was almost ready. The Castle was in fine condition, magnificent in size and appearance. The buildings were the property of the city, every building was. They couldn't be bought, only rented. Also in the Downtown the stores could only be rented. It made everything much simpler. On the way to the Castle there were three checkpoints. The military presence was obvious. In the Castle the General in charge of the logistics and communication explained the operation of the system. The best, the most up to date system it was in the world. Every city, every street in the world could be seen, communication could be established with anybody in seconds, the logistic team was close, staffed with specialists from every field, so they were capable to solve any problem almost immediately. The embassies became obsolete. He could chat with the heads of states face to face by video-call and solve everything more efficiently.

(- OK. We will see that in practice. So finally you and the Lieutenant and the Queen arrived, looked around, there was the military, body-guards, luxurious living quarters for you and for the Lieutenant, the building of the city was in progress, what else?

- The office was in the middle, the private living quarters on both sides, and there was a Turkish bath and the quarters of the inside body-guards, servants, house-keeping staff in the back. It was the same personnel for all that. The Lieutenant finally had her pleasure freely.)

- Boss, Julie, let me introduce you the inside staff. The most beautiful Thai girls I have ever seen. They are 20 of them. All are masters of the martial arts, they can cook, serve, and most importantly they love girls only. Well, what do you say, Boss, can we try the Turkish bath for relaxation? It is ready. The girls are ready and I am ready to enjoy finally some real deal.

- All right, Lieutenant, Julie, just go ahead, I'll join you and the Sergeants in just a second. He went to his suite to look up the wardrobe. Uniforms in many different colours, civilian clothes, joggings, shirts, and everything he'll ever need or never need. The insignia of the Generalissimo was an enormous diamond star on each shoulder. For the light-coloured uniforms the stars were made of sapphire of beautiful blue colour. Besides, Swiss watches and diamond rings, cufflinks, tiepins, everything. Kate and Jadwiga had their pleasure to have them made, that's for sure. OK, change for the baths. Bathrobes are there by the dozen. Good. Let's join the party. The bath was humongous, and was filled with 22 naked girls. Not bad.

- My dears, which language do you speak best?

- We speak Thai of course, some of us Chinese too, but everybody speaks Hungarian and English, some of us other tongues as well.

- And everybody is shaved. They are masters of the sexual practice as well as martial arts.

- Yes. Lieutenant, I can see that. Julie is in ecstasy now. You just go ahead, Lieutenant, finally you have your Paradise. OK, this day is for pleasure. Tomorrow we start saving the World.

Next morning he visited the HQ of the army-corps stationed there. His chauffeur was as always the Master-sergeant.

- We have come a long way, my friend. I remember when we were out on the streets of Budapest shooting gypsies and worried about the police catching us. And now we both and Felix have licence to kill anybody, and we don't have to explain to nobody. Not bad at all.

- Yes, Sir, it was heroic time back there. I remember Felix won the shooting contest every time. I envy the generations of today and tomorrow, but I would never trade the time with them. What we have done, will be in the history-books forever. But we are here, Sir. The commander is a Colonel-General, Hungarian. Old trusted friend of mine, one of the first who joined us from the military as Colonel. Here we are.

- Welcome, Generalissimo.

He explained the deployment of the Corps, the stations of the divisions and regiments, the security measures. The place is safe, no rockets can reach Byzantium. No airplanes, not a bird can fly over without us noticing it. Two divisions are on each part of the city-state, on the European and the Asian side. Nobody was allowed staying in the city who lived here before. All of the residents are newcomers. It is better this way, and that was our order.

- For whom did you swear up?

- Actually, I don't know. The change, the selection of the soldiers was so fast, we forgot that. It is an international corps, the best soldiers from every army, as ordered.

- Call the men together. Whoever is here now, will do. I wait... All right. Soldiers! I do not care what nationality you were until now. While you are here, you are not Hungarians, not Russians, not Swedish, or any other nationals. You are Byzantine. I know that this Corps is the best fighting force in the whole world, otherwise you wouldn't be here. Your commanding officers will continue your training; there will be lots of opportunities in the near future to fight. I want the enemy to run just by hearing that the Byzantine Army is coming. You take orders only which originated from me alone. You are not accountable to no one but me. It is a privilege to serve here. You will be taken care of when retire. You are citizens of Byzantium, the first city on the face of the Earth in importance from now on. You all are required to sign an oath or swearing in, which you'll receive this afternoon. You sign it, you stay. You may decide not to sign it, and will be stationed elsewhere. You are dismissed.

- Well, Sir, you want to look around the city? You have to see the Downtown area.

- All right, friend, let's go around. You were here for a week. Show me this new centre of world-power. Revenge for the one and a half centuries the Turks occupied half of Hungary.

The University quarter, the residential areas, the parks, the industrial parks, and finally the Downtown. In the middle of the square there was the statue of Constantine XII, the last Byzantine Emperor, who died on that famous day, the 29<sup>th</sup> of May, 1453 with sword in his hand, fighting. A real hero he was. The shops are here, the restaurants are open, even if there are not enough customers yet. They will come. The city included in the European side Rodosto, the Asian side 100 km, so it had potentiality for great development. It was his city-state.

- OK, my friend, let's go back to the Castle, we pick up the Queen and the Lieutenant, and will come back for lunch; or even better if you call the guards to bring them here. We will look around. I have to know my people. I want to know what kind of whisky they serve around here. Do you know a good pub? Let's go then.

(- OK. It starts to get boring again. So the city was under construction, the soldiers signed the oath, the restaurants were great, the whisky was great, let's jump a little in time. The Queen went to Madagascar, was crowned with that crown too, and the Asian, the South-American, the Japanese and every kind of nation's girls were shipped, flied into Madagascar, Africa, and the female soldiers from the whole world were induced to serve in the NPF for good money. It was a military force, guardians of nature, economical union, an accommodation and fun. Good. We'll have much more of that later. The Byzantine population grew rapidly, there was no taxation except 20% on dividends like everywhere in the empires; everybody was welcome with good skills and to study in the Universities. The Lieutenant figured out the logistics very fast, and implemented some new things. What else is there to say now?

- That will cover the first couple of months. Then we arrive to the *first* Constantine-Day. I wanted at least one sure holiday. It was the 29<sup>th</sup> of May, perfect weather, historical value, heroic day. The Queen came to Byzantium the day before, so everything was perfect.)

- Lieutenant, if you haven't noticed yet, I have changed your birthdate when I employed you. It is the 29<sup>th</sup> of May. Today you are 18. So you receive the rank of First Lieutenant. Here are the insignias. Put them on. You deserved it. You're lecturing the logistics staff, made them Byzantine Sergeants of different grades, the leaders of the teams Ensigns, worked out the tests for the qualifications, and so on.

- Well, thank you, Sir. I have also organized the NPF. Small matters, don't even mention it.

- Yes. And you're modest too. We are going to the Constantine-Square, and we will say something to the folks. Traditions have to be established.

- And you are going to improvise. It will be interesting. I can hardly contain myself.

The Square was full of people, the weather sunny and beautiful, rather hot, they sat down in a terrace of the best restaurant, the waiter came to take the orders, and that is the origin of the world-famous dish.

- I tell you what we want. We want everything, the best of everything, in a big silver plate. You tell the chef to do his best and create something fabulous. I want an aesthetically perfect and delicious best of the best, many different kinds of creations, meat mostly. I want the appropriate wine for everything, so the wine-specialist should be in it as well and after all, dessert. The fantasy can go havoc now. Now I want the oldest, rarest, best whisky you have. The Queen wants the best wine; the Lieutenant can have his birthday-wish. He is 18 today.

- Yeah. And we are going to name it the Dish of the Generalissimo. Good. I just have a juice.

- Darling, is that what I think it is? There, at the fountain. Isn't she naked? Looks to me she is naked. Not bad, not bad at all, I would say.

- And the most beautiful creature I have ever seen. I just can't believe it. What should be done in this situation, Boss? She is the typical northern Aryan beauty, unmatched by anyone. God, please, for birthday present. I never believed in you God, but if you really exist you give her to me, and I'll thank you for her, I promise. Laugh, Sir, at least I can make you laugh.

- You always delight me, Lieutenant. You are my son, or daughter, you know that. But this is a strange situation I have to say. The police are there already. Well, Lieutenant, time to take charge in this situation. Wait! Policeman, bring that girl here. There she comes without her clothes, and that is a very satisfactory display of the female beauty.

- Here she is, Sir. I ordered her to put her clothes on, but she refused. What should I do, Sir?
- OK. You do nothing. Listen, everybody. My word is the law of this city-state. And I have decided and hereby proclaim that from now on it is the right of every female to go without clothes whenever and wherever she wants to. It is an inalienable right of the females, and no law can be made ever to infringe this right. I have spoken. Now, my dear, would you tell us your name, and the reason to commit this act?
- Sir, my name is Helene, I am 16, and the sole purpose of my act was to have the attention of the Lieutenant. I know it was a silly thing to do, but I am in love with the Lieutenant, even if he is a man. I am sorry.
- Don't be sorry. The boss just made a historical law because of you. Why don't you sit down, Helene? First I have to thank God, thank you God, and ensure you my dear that your act was perfect. You are perfect. Now this Thai sergeant will call the garage in the Castle to bring the Lamborghini here, and we are going for a ride. Later we choose some clothes for you in the boutiques. But now, Helene, join us for this exquisite food. It looks very enticing. Bon appetite, my dear.



(- They went for a ride, then Helene moved in the Castle, very happy that the Lieutenant is girl, but the speeches of that day you have to quote. Insert a picture here, maybe which will help the poor reader to read through this book; some pleasure. You have to reward them. This one will do. Yeah, those girls of your time weren't ugly at all.)

- Citizens of Byzantium! This day in the year 1453 the Turks took that Castle by force. I have conquered this city from the Turks, and named the place after her original name. Constantine XII with only 7000 soldiers defended the walls against fifteen times as many Turks. The Turks had the biggest gun at that time, well trained soldiers, but couldn't avail. It was the 29<sup>th</sup> of May when the Sultan decided on a final attack. It would have been repulsed. So how did the Turks take the City? Somebody forgot to lock a door in the wall. It is not a joke, it is history.

A Turkish soldier tried to open it, and it was open. It was not the biggest gun mankind has ever made by that time, it was not the overpowering of the soldiers fifteen times what demolished Constantinople. It was an idiot who forgot to lock a door in the wall. I have ordered that door to be made into the wall of the Castle, and I have ordered the statue of Constantine almost like this one here to be made there, looking at that silly door. And I have ordered that every student of the Military Academy, the logisticians, the future decision-makers of man-

kind in details have to visit that door, and remember that door for the rest of their life. We can never make that kind of mistake ever again. We can't make any kind of mistake ever again. And now, we make this day for the commemoration of Constantine XII, the heroism in general, but mainly for the Reconquista of the City from the barbarians. So let this day be the day of happiness and pleasure. I think the First Lieutenant wants to tell you something.

- Thank you, Sir. Folks, this is my birthday. Thank you. I declare this day to be the day of beauty. Let us have a beauty contest. The girl who gets the most votes will be the Queen of Byzantium for one year, receives to keep a diamond coronet, a new Alfa Romeo sports car, and the gifts of every shop in the Downtown. She will be the representative and the face of this great city. There is no need to register, just be here in 2 hours' time, and then the contest will last for two hours. So come and show yourselves. I want to remind you all that the Generalissimo has just declared nudism lawful, and the votes go for the whole person, if you know what I mean. Good luck. The voting tickets can be purchased in every store. Every person has one vote only and anyone may vote. The ticket-money goes to the Beauty-Queen.

- Well, darling, I think this Square will be filled with naked girls in two hours. Not bad, I would say. Helene darling, your namesake has caused a big thing couple of thousand years back in history, and now you did it again. Although this one is much more pleasant, I would say, I think the Spartans and Trojans would agree with me on this one.

- Have you made the arrangements with the stores, Lieutenant? Good. How was your ride, my dear? The Lieutenant tends to drive quite fast. He may, we have 5 lanes each direction.

- Very pleasant, Sir. It was an orgasmic experience at 280 km/hour. I have especially enjoyed myself when the Lieutenant enlightened me about her sex. It was a very satisfying ride, Sir. I helped myself a little with my fingers. Unforgettable experience it was. It is worth a try, my Queen. I hope we can repeat it many times.

- Too bad the Generalissimo doesn't drive that fast. Anyway, I am pregnant.

- That is a wonderful news, my dear.

The point of the story is that Helene won that contest, and the pregnancy of the Queen gave an idea to the Lieutenant. She went to the clinic, has taken all her eggs out, and kept them frozen. By the help of the Queen and the Thais she collected the sperm of the Generalissimo in the coming months, and the so impregnated eggs of her were implanted into some volunteers for good money. This way they had lots of babies year after year. That was the greatest idea as it was proven later.

The international political situation was as follows: Nepal, Bhutan, Pakistan, Bangladesh and India were in great trouble. Plague after plague decimated the population time after time. First the big crowded cities and the backward villages were almost depopulated. The same tactic was deployed as before. The leaders signed an accession to the High Council of the Empires, and it was decided later which country, which parts of which country, will go to which Empire. In Iran some religious fanatics started some popular uprising against who knows what, and when the first foreigners were murdered, the two empires went in there with overwhelming force, and occupied that country too. Not many were alive by that time, much less after the war. Basically that whole big territory without any major problem became the land of the empires. They decided with the emperors that Bangladesh goes to Russia, so she

will have an outlet to the Indian-Ocean and along the Tehran – Kabul – Rawalpindi – Lahore – Calcutta line will be the border, those cities becoming international, commercial centres. The large part of India and Pakistan became the territory of the NPF, which was under the authority of the High Council, not the Empires. For this reason the Queen of Madagascar who was the leader of the NPF too in theory, being the Queen of the females in general, was taken into the High Council. Also the Commander of the Armies became a member as Marshal. The whole of India's, Pakistan's, Bangladesh's original 1.6 billion populations have been reduced to no more than 70 or 80 million, as it should never have exceeded this number. That land is not suitable for human inhabitation, but rather a jungle for animals. The girls rescued from the territories in distress and the female soldiers of the NPF have taken over their territories, while the inhabitable parts and industrial areas were populated by Europeans. The Indians were inoculated and implanted, so they could work and live a great life, but unable to have offspring. It has taken up lots of time to organize that continent-sized territory, but it was the work of the logistic staff of the Empires and the NPF. The overpopulation of the Earth had its toll on the environment. It had to be repaired if mankind wanted not only to vegetate, but to develop into a new great age, the Age of the Scientific Society. For this reason the population should not exceed the 2 billion, and only the mentally strong should be selected for multiplication by the IQ-test method. Under 100 nobody could have children.

But let's go back to the politics. Not because it is important, but have to close the subject once and for all. Indonesia had her toll of the plaques. China already signed the accession when her population lowered to 200 million. The General in charge there has made the deals, let Japan and Korea to take over the northern parts, organized everything with the Lieutenant smoothly and efficiently. For the work he has done in India and China the First Lieutenant advanced to the rank of Byzantine Captain.

And then a Chinese organization killed the General in charge there, and an uprising started. And that was the worst they could have done. The armies of the two empires answered the killing of the General with an unmeasured military retaliation and revenge. At that time by an international treaty all of the nuclear weapons were annihilated, because it was absolutely unnecessary. Nobody had nuclear weapons. The war on China was fought only by conventional weaponry. Nobody wanted to struggle for a territory which would be uninhabitable because of some radiation by the use of thermonuclear weapons for ten thousand years to come. There was no hurry. The soldiers knew it is probably the last war they can fight, so they fought for the pleasure of fighting. Indonesia misconceived the signs, took it as weakness, and helped the Chinese. So Indonesia got herself into the war with the empires also. The Commander of the Armies had a residence in the Castle of Byzantium, a military room, a staff and logistics of his own, and with the greatest pleasure ordered fleets, armies and corps and divisions here and there. Japan and Korea went in to China, occupying the northern territories as part of their countries, but in the Russian Empire already. The girls were rescued first everywhere, millions of them, and the State Security went in right after the fighting divisions as always in the previous wars. In the meantime the leaders of the West were invited to Aachen, the city of great fake historical value, and the seat of the then Colonel General in charge of the Western-European affairs. Now finally it will have real historical value. The Generalissimo and the Captain both went there. All of the countries of the West were present.

- Gentlemen, I have a little concern about your well-being. And I mean it in both senses of the word, the economical and the mental. You see, we talked it over with the Captain and the General, and nothing makes sense what you're doing or rather what you're not doing. You are still using the same old monetary system, and the production just isn't in synchrony with the welfare system you have. You produce in well-organized factories, then you distribute the wealth amongst the non-productive people, the producers are paying high taxes, and the standard of living just isn't as great as before. It just doesn't make sense at all. It is illogical and wasteful. We can produce what we need in half the time, because we don't have the non-productive class of state-paid people. You are leasing some territories from us in Africa, but didn't take my offer to establish an Empire of the West, so you could have had those territories for yourself to keep. There is a war going on in China and Indonesia, and the General didn't report any voluntary offers from you to participate in the war. It seems to me, you just do not realize something. We do not need Southern-China, Indochina, Indonesia. We, the two empires would be happy to give it to you. The white South-Africa, Australia and New-Zealand participate in the war and they keep the territories they occupy, and also would be happy to form an empire, a third empire with you. They are here, they are ready to sign. Of course you have to introduce the scientific monetary system, and your working-hours will be 5 or 6 hours a day, and with the new and well established logistics we have, you wouldn't need to feed the unproductive workers, because they will disappear, those jobs are completely idiotic, and only stupid people and unwise politicians would keep and qualify those jobs as valid. While I am talking to you right now, all of your TV-stations are broadcasting a movie made about the contrast of the lifestyle you could have and the stupidity you still have. I can send your citizens' entire home today, those who're working in our territories. They are millions. What would they do to you? Because in my territory to keep weapons is not prohibited. No, we encourage the people to have weapons and use it against the government if they find their government oppressive. We never had one incident. At the time I finish speaking here, everybody in the West will know the hidden truth. Your democracy of today is the most foolish system possible. The elected politicians are unable to lead, unable to think right, and a mafia of thieves they are. By the time I finish speaking here, everybody in your countries will be ready to lynch you all, unless you do the right thing here and now. That movie was made and directed by the Captain here, and believe me, no man on Earth is capable outsmarting the Captain. He is the smartest, brightest man alive. Besides, all of your major factories are mine. Yes, gentlemen, we are the majority stockholders of your entire industry. So in one hour I could close down all of your factories, and I would have the perfect right to do so. Now I tell you how I think we should proceed from here. You all sign the papers my great soldiers place in front of you now, establishing the Western Empire. You have the western parts of Africa, as parts of the countries, not the Empire if you wish. You'll mobilise your armies and fight beside us for your new territories in China, Indochina and Indonesia. You might even hold onto your offices. The people will be richer and happier, and you will live. Refuse to establish the empire and you will all die right now by the hands of your own people and the new leaders will sign the documents. I think I made it absolutely clear for you. Do you gentlemen have questions?

- Generalissimo, the High Council will have authority over the Empire?

- Yes. The culture of the countries will be preserved. Local authorities will govern the everyday life. So it is business as usual, except the political part. We don't need that in the future.

- Who's going to be the emperor, and what will be his authority?

- You can choose the person freely, but I suggest the General here. In case of the West he is already your emperor. His works or doings will be those he did in the last years. He will do the same as he is doing now. In our system rank means duty, not privilege first. And he'll have a seat in the Council, representing you. Now, I am really tired of telling things that any schoolboy could tell you in Byzantium. There is no other way. You sign, because this is the necessity of history. So it is not a question. It is an answer. The movie is almost over. You go out of here as heroes or feet first as dead corpses. The documents are right in front of you. You sign on the dotted lines. Your work is done with that...OK. Finally you signed. Colonel, we proceed with the press conference. We need months to reorganize this whorehouse. Get the team to start working. The Byzantine divisions may start disembarking. If you make a false move, gentlemen, they deal with you accordingly. We make the Empire for the real commonwealth of the people, not for the elected leaders to play with the people. You just became the heroes of your people. Now the Presidents and Prime Ministers of the countries will make a statement and a short press conference, so let the people know. The transcript you will say is right in front of you. That is all you're going to say. Congratulations. We'll have the coronation on this weekend; it has already been prearranged by our protocol.

- What movie did I make?

- You never play poker? They already have signed their resignations. We proceed with the TV announcements, and the coronation of Otto. That is a good name for the Emperor of the Empire of the West. The Marshal is here to take charge of the armies, swear them in for Byzantium, reorganize and deploy them in the war. It was a piece of cake. You stay for a while to systematize the logistic. Aachen, yes, it is a perfect place for the real Emperor of the West.

Everything went smoothly. The Generalissimo stayed for the coronation, the Captain stayed longer, the western armies were deployed in China and Indonesia, and that was the story of the establishment of the third empire under Byzantium. The factories, the society, the logistics were reorganized, and while it was going on, the Captain went home and acquired the rank of the Mayor. By the time of the *second* Constantine-Day he was 19, a Byzantine Major, and now three empires were under Byzantine rule. With the armies of the West, the war was easily won, but not just yet. The memory of the old glory had an effect on the citizens of the West. They started the deportation of the coloured people from Europe to Africa and to the new territories. The Nature Preservation Force in the meantime occupied and cleaned the islands of the Pacific Ocean. It was theirs to keep. South-Africa was almost all white by then. The whole world was in movement and under restructuration for years to come, step by step.

(- OK. So we become tedious again. People will read this book, don't you know that? Well, some might. On the second Constantine-Day Helene won the contest again. The Thai sergeants promoted to the rank of Master-sergeant, they had their red little Alfa Romeo and Jeep, the war was in progress, the leaders of the world came to Byzantium, and the city was beautiful, big, rich, and full of students. The world's best Universities of the Sciences were here, the smartest researchers had their laboratories, and money was no problem. Great insti-

tutions were relocated, everybody with high IQ was welcomed to research, and I am repeating myself. The research of the chemistry, medicine and genetics, and every other project were well-financed, and it soon had its results. The Military Academy produced the leaders of the whole world, but only in Byzantium. Why? Because they had to make sure that the education the cadets received is valid, and the students, every one of them knew the Major and knew you, because you two taught them too. So everybody had to have the magic of working for you when out of the school. Only over IQ 140 and at least one degree of BSc or MSc was the ticket just to get into the Academy. Everybody had to be a specialist first. Am I right?

- Yes. The Academy had two, three and four year courses, and we decided who can go higher after the two or three years. Two years, they became sergeants or master-sergeants. Three years, ensign. Four years, officers. There was a master-course for refreshment, and for Chief Officers. They were the government basically, the problem-solvers. We were at the end of the first year then, at the second Constantine-Day. We were sitting on the terrace, nice weather. My son with the Queen was 4 months old, and other babies were just born with the Major.)

- Darling, this right you gave to the girls a year ago, well, it went havoc, I would say. By now they've obtained that right everywhere. Not bad at all. The Square is filled with naked girls. The Thai sergeants on leave are naked too. There, at the fountain. How is your whisky?

- Very pleasant, my dear. By the time we finish the war, the whole world is ours, except the American Continent. Major, you have your flying hotel. What would you say if I sent you to Brazil? Amazonia is almost deserted. You negotiate with them to repopulate Manaus and other cities by the NPF. In the same time you recruit as many Brazilian, Venezuelan, Columbian and other girls to the Force as you can.

- Very good idea, Sir. Somewhere we have to start conquering that continent. I will have enough vaccine. And portable shocking machines. Helene, dear, tomorrow off we go. There you will need only your coronet. Well, we'll be invited to some official parties too. Tonight we have a reception, a soiree. The American is landing just about now. Something is holding him back. The General told me that the Jews are in charge there. When we gave Amman and Damascus to Israel, the condition was for the Jews to return home from everywhere in the world within a year, or they give up their identity if they stay. The other condition was to demilitarize. They still have a small army of their own. It is forbidden everywhere. Many returned home, but not all. I would say the way to the Capitol is by the detriment of Israel. I had troubles with the banking sector in the West when I organized that Empire. I had to call in Felix to eliminate some instigators. He has done it as usual. All of them were Jews. After eliminating them, there were no obstacles left. It is up to you, Sir, but I say get 10 divisions and the SD and annihilate Israel. It has to be done anyway sooner or later. Then eradicate them everywhere in the world. Without it, we'll always have troubles. It was the same old problem through the ages. Centuries after centuries it is always the same old story. The world is just a better place without the vermin. Every country which expelled them became a better place. England had been called merry England during those 3 centuries there were no Jews, expelled. The idiot Cromwell screwed it by letting them back. America is ours immediately after the real Holocaust; they lied about that German type, we do it right this time.

- Darling, the Major is right. I have had lots of problems with them. You have already liquidated about 4 or 5 billion people, and there are more to come. 10 – 15 million more won't

count much in number, but count very much in politics. Besides, I puke when they keep telling that lie about the holocaust. They are born liars. Never trust any Jew in anything.

- This whisky is very fine. Waiter, bring me one more of this, please. Sergeant, call the boys to ask Felix to visit me at his convenience. The king of England with his beautiful wife dignifies our company. Welcome, Lady, Sir. Please, have a seat. Thank you for the rare whiskies you sent me; magnificent century old smooth beauties. I treasure them.

- Queen, Sir, Major, it is an honour. It was a small return for that wine of the kings. Thank you, Sir for giving me back or remaking the British Empire. Can you explain the legal logic of the organization? The new system working like charm, the people have more freedom.

- Well, Sir, let me answer that. We have the local level, where all the matters are taken care by the people and the local logistics. Then we have the territorial level, which could be the country, but not necessarily. In your case you have many territories with the higher level of logistics to govern it. Your British Empire has nothing to do with Australia and New Zealand; they are independently administered together, so only parts of Africa, and soon parts of China and Indochina and other territories are parts of Great-Britain, and there is no British Empire. You have a higher authority, the Emperor of the West in Aachen with a logistics team of his, which governs the whole Western Empire. And an even higher authority is the High Council or the Generalissimo, who has the logistics team of his own. You have your own responsibilities all right. We have responsibilities for the whole of the mankind here in Byzantium. We look a little further than Britain's logistic or Aachen does. You look further than the local authorities do. Different dimensions exist beside each other. The logic and philosophy behind the logistics are the same everywhere, which are the good of the individual and the good of the society at one and the same time. Some has geographical limits. Here, we are the keepers of the whole of humanity, the future of mankind with no limits. We have published couple of books on this matter. Maybe one day the leaders will read them too.

- Thank you, Major. The King has got the point. You, Sir, first of all represent the aristocracy, the High Society. That is your main chore to attend to. The other works are done by the logistic officers. So you don't involve yourself with the matters of the economy, politics, and any other matter you are not specifically asked to be concerned with. Consult with the leader of the Officers' Corps of your country first if in doubt. Now he is like your Prime Minister was before, only more effective and has more leeway to act and decide on his own. There is no Parliament, no elections, and won't ever be again. You rather live a real aristocratic life and lead the social sphere. It is a very important role, so you are freed from any other duties.

- The main thing, my crowned college is that we can live the life of the leisured class. Arts, theatre, music, parties, those things are our duty to attend to. There are not many of us, but I think it should be expanded. The aristocracy is needed in a civilised society.

- And how would you solve the problem of the inheritance of the rank, my dear? Could have been expanded, but what happens with the offspring? May he or she be an idiot or a drunk, a criminal, isn't fit to be in the high society. Well, I don't think it is the right time for that. Today's aristocracy is the Officers' Corps. The officers of the logistics are in high demand. This gives an extra impulse to them to study many years. But here comes the President of the USA and the First Lady of that country. Please, have a seat, Lady, Sir. How do you like our city?

- Very pleasant, Generalissimo. Half of the girls are naked. Very pleasant, very free society you have created here. You have no crimes, if my information is right.

- Lady, we are a happy society. What is good for the individual is good for the community. The announcement of the result of the beauty-contest is due, Major. The votes are counted. Helene, please introduce you. She is the winner again. Next year she won't be contestant. Two winnings are more than enough. Others need some glory as well.

- It is a pleasure to know you, darling. You are absolutely gorgeous. You are always naked, my dear? Well, nothing is wrong with that, I would like to have some beauty around me.

- Most of the time, First Lady. I like it like this. If you excuse me, I have to receive my prize.

- And we better go for a shopping spree, darling. I bet the Presidents want to chat without us.

- You see, Mr President, we have no crimes, no beggars, and everybody is happy. How is it in your Washington? Could you sit down in an open terrace in the middle of the city? I don't think so. America is a dying society, in need of an overhaul very soon. Your time is up, Mr President. This is your last year in office. But I can help you with that. We talk later. Now it is time to enjoy the view, the whisky, and the weather. The Major is announcing the result of the contest; this is a great deal here. What is the great deal in America? I tell you. It is, how do you pay the welfare to the blacks, to the Indio, to the Mexicans, the Asians, how can the people pay their rent, how to create unproductive work, and how to collect the taxes from the producing workers. We have almost no taxes, Mr President. The people of the West paid high taxes just recently. Now they're out of that vicious cycle. The working hours have been lowered, and the standard of living is up. Magic trick, would you say? No. It is science. There are no gimmicks. We have just eliminated the idiocy what you've never recognized as such. Are you aware of the fact that all of your female soldiers, well, the whites only, are working for me and swore up for me in the NPF? And do you know that many smart white Americans are employed by the Empires? What you have left home is rubbish. Your army now couldn't take an island. Your military is only the shadow of the great army America once had. And by the way, I own the majority of the shares of your industry. And I own the whole of your national debt. With the countries we have acquired we acquired the state-bonds they held also, and their deposits in the banks of America. I could make the dollar a worthless piece of paper in ten minutes. But it is not the time for high politics. It was just a reminder, the introduction of whatever I'm going to tell you later today. I am happy the ladies and the king went for a shopping spree. Now it is just the Major, the Colonel General, and us. Mr President, America is my concern. You gave up on America. The Mayor and the General will talk with your envoy. We will talk, just the two of us, later. Now, here is the world-famous Dish of the Generalissimo. Let's enjoy, gentlemen. At least I've made something for the advance of the culinary pleasures as well. Now every self-respecting restaurant has this silver plate of the best.

- That idiotic piece of paper, Mr President was the door in the wall if you know which door in which wall I am talking about. The Declaration of Independence is the name of that paper.

- What's wrong with it, Major? It's our treasure.

- It was written and published independently from the age in which it contained some valid particular claims. That is the problem. At the time of writing, in July 2<sup>nd</sup>, 1776 it meant totally different things what it means today. I know, 4<sup>th</sup> of July you mean to correct me; that was the date of acceptance of the script by Congress. Self-evident truths it starts with; too easy to say that. Those are nor self-evident, nor truths universally. At the time of writing Jefferson never considered to include the coloured people in it. In 1859, in the case of Dredd-Scott vs. USA, the Court ruled for Jefferson, exempting the coloured people from the rights declared in

that paper. The leftist Marxist liberals included them later. That was a mistake. They left the door open for the barbarians. Even Lincoln wanted to repatriate the blacks to Africa. Now the originally WASP America is less than half-white, fat, unable to think right, and gave up on life. You have a slowly dying society. This dish is excellent. I love meat prepared in so many different ways. Helene, go after the ladies and buy some clothes, my love. The stores are open day and night here, Mr President. That is a condition for the stores to be in business. And they are doing well here. No shoplifting, no need for security, no robbery occurred ever. The Colonel General told me about the riots you suffering from. By the way, why don't you make him a four-star General to begin with in your army? Believe me it would help you a lot.

- We will talk it over with the President, Major.

- What did you mean by saying I could stay in office? You mean for long?

- For life. But we talk it over later. Enjoy the food now. Do you know why I gave up on reading books and watching movies? They are stupid. At the end always the one with some fake democratic values wins, and you know that in the beginning. So foolish, so childish, and I just feel sorry for the folks who have to read and watch those amateurish Jewish rubbish. The real life, the real science is very different from those Hollywood-tales. Democracy is slang word, everybody is using it and nobody have any idea what it really means. In the ancient Athens democracy was the rule of the mob. That idiocy didn't last 50 years even. The philosophers wrote and spoke up against democracy. That is the origin of the Greek philosophy and philosophy as such. Alexander the Great disseminated Hellenism all over the world; Hellenism was the anti-democratic philosophy. Sparta didn't have philosophers. Sparta didn't need them. Sparta lasted 800 years. They lived the real life well; they had the answer, so why ask the question? Athens had problems, so they needed some answers. The philosophy of today isn't more than playing with the words, making up concepts nobody understands, not even the philosophers themselves. We have the science in the place of philosophy. We have the answers. It is cruel and bloody, one would say. But it is the guilt of the leftish liberal democrats who left that door open for the barbarians. It is our duty for mankind to correct the mistakes of the centuries. We're doing it. And we will finish it up. It is our duty. One way or another we'll achieve the perfection. You can join the modern Crusade or perish; better enrol in.

- Sir, I think the President is more interested in the time he could spend in the Oval office. Sir, you will be the President for life, hero of the people, and no more elections will make you anxious, and all these can be done legally. That is the answer for your concern. But the Generalissimo will tell you more, and the Colonel-General will do the actual work for you, who you will appoint Captain-General or General of the Army later. Now, if you'll excuse me, I have to talk to the Americans, and tomorrow I've to take over Amazonia. Bye now.

- What does he mean take over Amazonia? He means the whole territory? How?

- Your female soldiers will take it over among others. An agreement he will work out with Brazil, Venezuela, Columbia, and others. It is empty now, 7 million km<sup>2</sup>, so no big deal. The Major now will let your staff to know that they have no chance of recovery unless you and they work very closely with us. They will understand. You appoint the Colonel-General the Chief of the Joint Staff of your armed forces, and leave him alone to work. You might give him the fifth star as well. As you are aware as Commander in Chief, there is a six-star rank in your army, but nobody has ever received it. He will get it, and you will stay in the White

House for life. America will be great and WASP again. In this coming age the whole world and the whole of human race is what matters. There will be no my country and your country. The world will be one and indivisible politically, so we can start working on really important issues. We haven't done anything yet, except scratched the surface, and we're only paving the road to arrive to the ante-room of the scientific society. Miles to go before we sleep.

(- Repeating the same over and over again. OK. So you talked with the American. He was only interested in being President for life. The Major explained the situation to the staff, and they slowly but surely realized that Byzantium is their only salvation. They went home, the General was appointed the Chief of the Joint Staff, and he had free hand over the armed forces which he started to reorganize. The Major had an agreement in South-America, and got Amazonia for the NPF. What happened with Israel?

- After the General's appointment I suggested a joint venture with the American army, and with their 5 divisions and my 10 divisions we destroyed Israel. And I mean destroyed everything, meaning everybody. There was no man, woman or child left alive. I let the Americans doing the hard fighting, so the Jews of America knew what to expect. Felix did the rest of the task. The major point is that no Jews were left alive inside or outside of Israel. And I mean the Jews who were complying with the power of the group over the individual, because that is the definition of the Jew. There were Jews by birth but not mentally Jews, so those we didn't bother, they were terrorised by the Jews themselves. Spinoza was born a Jew, but he was never a Jew in mind; the exact opposite he was, back in the XVII century. So that country became extinct, and we named it together with the surrounding areas the Levant as it was called before. Jerusalem was destroyed. Too historical, too much negative value connected to it. The whole operation lasted about a month or two. It wasn't that easy at that time, but it has happened, it is history, and it has no more relevance to the high politics or the history of the world. It just closed a chapter and opened another one. Then the Chinese and Indonesian war was finished, joined by and together with the American army. The Americans occupied the Philippines. They could have it. It was almost deserted by then. So the General became a hero, and advanced to the rank of five-star General or Captain-General it was called.

- Then the South-American war came.

- It was not a real war like the Chinese. After the General was promoted to five-star General or Captain-General, or General of the Army, all the same, we provoked a little contradiction between Venezuela and America. Venezuela always had problems with America, and now they sank a Navy-ship of little value. Well, our Special Forces did it actually. But it was an act of war, *casus belli*. In Argentina, Chile, Uruguay, Bolivia, Paraguay, we agitated against the Indians in the political arena, because they were openly anti-white.)

- What we have here is a typical civil-war situation, gentlemen. Felix is doing his part among both sides, and successfully divided the society in those countries. We have to unite the whites together, the whole region. We have to force them to apprehend that those countries were artificially made long time ago, and the whole region is in truth one unit with two sides, the whites and the non-whites. It is a great puzzle for you to solve, and whoever comes up with a solution, will be promoted. You have half hour to write down the logistical solution. Include Brazil and Mexico as well. I'll be back, and we'll see.

The Byzantine Ensigns were thinking hard, wrote down how they would direct their shift to achieve the task. In about 40 minutes he went back to the room.

- Let me see your plans. Interesting. Now, enlighten me in just one or two sentences if you will, briefing me on the big picture. I can read while listening. Only the South-American problem, the beginning is what interests me now. Go ahead.

- Help both sides with weapons, and we help the whites when they come to power or ask for help. I would let them fight their own war. During their fight we slowly take over the command, and deploy our forces to win. That way the appreciate their freedom much better.

- That is one possibility. What if the Indio wins locally? They are killers. What if the whites are separated and the wild beasts killed them one by one? We are responsible for the whites. We have to go in first to make sure we win together with the whites on our side. That way we are Salvador for them. We unite them all right that way too. Get in first, unite, and fight.

- When the fighting starts we go in, and occupy the whole territory independently from any side. Nobody can oppose us. Even the Americans can be our allies. Then it becomes part of the Eastern Empire and then we reorganize the whole territory as one and do the selection.

- The Americans have their war in the north side of the continent with Venezuela and Columbia, so we can help them there. Even the NPF can be involved. In the same time on the pretence of preserving the peace, or without any pretence even, we get in and help to organize and fight with the armies of the whites in every country. This way we are friends and Salvador. Let them have their fight, and then we unite the region under the Great King country by country. The people of that area wouldn't tolerate American rulers. We have to occupy it. They are mostly Italians, Germans, and other Europeans. We get in with 50 divisions, and Andreas unite the territory in his empire at the end, fighting a fluid war, go with the wind.

- Now the Sergeants will distribute the plan. It is about the same as you thought out. Good. It is time we have Byzantine officers here for the leaders of the shifts. I think you all have to proceed to the rank of Lieutenant. But you, you had the most perfect answer. You are First Lieutenant. Congratulations, gentlemen. OK. You proceed according to the plan distributed amidst you. The details you have to decide accordingly, as we go. First Lieutenant, you oversee the shifts. It also means you are on duty basically all the time. Well, rank has its backlashes. We know the end, you gentlemen figure out the way to get there. It is a complex plan, so if there won't be any problems, you all will advance one more rank at the end of it.

The fighting started, the whites had their weapons and drilling, 50 divisions were deployed to help them, and they together exterminated the Indio. All of those countries were united, and Chile, Argentina, Uruguay, Paraguay, Bolivia became the territory and part of the Eastern Empire. The monetary and logistical reforms implemented, and everybody was happy. In the same time the American army had her own war with Venezuela, Columbia, Peru, Panama, and with the help of the NPF and the Byzantine Army they finally won. Now new problems arouse. The north and the south was already his. Mexico and the Middle-American countries were in the middle. The eastern part of Brazil was still intact. The good old plague came to the rescue. It is one thing to let the soldiers play. But about 500 million unwanted people are a whole different ball-game. After rescuing the girls by the millions, quarantine was declared, and the soldiers went slowly ahead while in the Mexican and Brazilian inside the sanitary

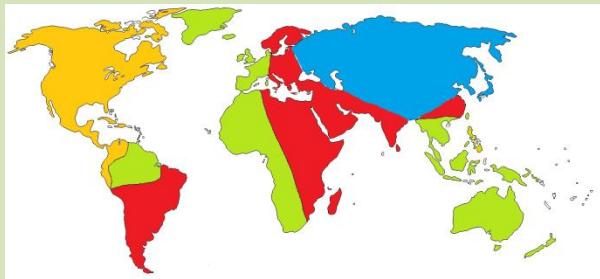
forces helped the population with serums. Only the whites received the real serum. The main point again is that it was a big deal then for the individual people involved, but the outcome was known beforehand, and it was only the matter of time when it will end. It was great importance also that the American coloured people should be deployed in the frontline, so they can die out fast. They did die, because of the plaque they went into by some unwise orders. By the third Constantine-Day the American Continent was conquered. Brazil was won by the Western armies, so part of it became the territory of the Empire of the West. Amazonia went to the NPF. It was time to establish the fourth empire. Canada, the United States, Mexico, Middle-America, the northern parts of Venezuela, Columbia, Peru, Ecuador, and down the Pacific-side of Peru, Cuba, some Caribbean islands and the Philippines became the American Empire, the by then six-star General became Emperor, and member of the High Council. His temporary residence was the dissolved UN HQ in New York. The restructuration of the whole world only then started and lasted for many months if not years. But the political base was there, was a strong, so no more war or old-fashioned international politics slowed down the development. The diamond, the sapphire, the other gems and the gold, the platinum and the silver became the monopoly and property of the High Council everywhere in the world.

(- Was that really that easy? The Senate of America or the good liberals didn't object?

- Well, I just cannot recall exactly, but of course there was some opposition from the ones who would lose power. But at that time America was under military rule, the civilians didn't have much to say, the multitude was on our side, and Felix was busy to eliminate whoever had a word against us. The President was with us, Canada had no other choice but join, Mexico was a conquered country with not many inhabitants by then. The Army ruled, the General ruled with the officers and the soldiers on his side, so it was easy under those circumstances. Of course the full organization of that territory had taken a good year later, but the frame was there to proceed from. America returned to the merry place it was long ago. The WASP returned to power, the blacks and other races were implanted as usual; the standard of living went sky-high. Everybody could have very high standard of living, because we eliminated the non-productive class, and the whole world was there to take over, to play on, without limitations. Ideology of the old type went to the trash-can. Nobody cared about it anymore.

- You made the precious metals and gem your monopoly too. So you just confiscated all?

- It was the doing of the Colonel and Felix. Felix had his own method for solving problems, and his efficacy was unbelievably high, the end sanctified the means, and his people had very high limit of morality, meaning moral discern didn't play any role in their carrying out their duty. The state first and the security of the state, guarding the achievement of the state was their duty. I am not too familiar with the procedures, but I think yes, basically it was a confiscation. What it meant in reality was that from that time on the Byzantine logistics dealt with the problem. The stores didn't close; well, many of them did, but the mining and the stocks of the stores became the property of Byzantium. Well, some didn't like it, but remember that the Jews were exterminated by then, so the majority of the stocks had no owners anyway. But it isn't that important at this stage. Later of course it proved to be a genius move. So we will see. Now, let's go back to the tale. We had the next Constantine-Day.)



- Citizens of the World! Now, on this **third** Constantine-Day I proudly announce that the whole world became politically one, we have the world-peace at last, and we can concentrate our energy and resources and brain-power on constructing a much better world.

The four empires are final for now; soon there will be no need for armed forces, except as peace-keeping force. You, citizens are fully in charge of your own destiny; everybody is citizen of the world, and there is no need for any travelling documents, bureaucracy, and other idiocies of the past. You are free to go, live and work wherever whenever you want to do so. The Officers' Corps is in place to help you to uphold your freedom, not for destroying it or infringe upon it. We have arrived to the threshold of the Age of the Scientific Society finally. We build from here; the limit is the starry sky. One said it before. The person, who did the most to achieve it, is the former Major, who is 20 years old today, and now by the decision of the High Council he has been promoted to the rank of Byzantine Colonel. He is the overseer and Chief of the Officers' Corps of the World which is the new order of the knights of the coming age. Colonel, come and open this day.

When the Colonel went to the podium, in his beautiful uniform with the insignia of the Byzantine Colonel, (she never wore anything but uniforms, except when in training or at home) the citizenry greeted him with ovation and applause. The Square was filled with people. Byzantium doubled its size and at least quadrupled in population since the first Constantine-Day. The TV broadcasted the whole Byzantine festivity thorough the Word. Actually it became holiday in the whole world.

- Folks, there is one man I would never disagree with, but now I say he is not right, because it is him, who we all have to thank for the present and for the coming age. It was him alone who started this revolution of the mind, and put it into practice. We all know that, so thank you for the love, thank you for the support, and have a great life, everybody. This is the day of the festivity of the whole world now, so enjoy, citizens of the world. Constantine, look down and be happy. The new age of modern knighthood descended on us. I promise you that door will be locked and the barbarians never ever appear among us. Now let the festivity commence.

(- Yeah, you were shining each other. OK, no problem, go ahead.)

The NPF came to the Square. The girls had their body-paint, but that is all they wore. With them on leash were lions, tigers, pumas. It was a great show. It would be useless and boring to list what else happened from 10 AM until midnight. Many things happened, many different shows, martial-arts contests, free food, outside the city the folks had their festivity too, and the Universities had an open day, and so on. The major impact on history has been decided on the terrace.

- There is a nice unused chunk of land beside the Castle. A skyscraper could be built on it. The officers could work on a problem at home there even in teams. They live all over the city

now. It could be used for hotel or for living quarters for dignitaries besides. The upper levels will have the big apartments, the lower ones the smaller. Ultra-modern apartments those will be. The officers always handy that way, they get the lower levels. What do you say, Boss?

- Will talk with the architect. Good idea. Consider it done. We are in peace. The army will be dissolved later, except maybe 15 – 20 divisions. They will be where there is a need for them. I think they will screw the NPF mostly, but I'm happy for them. But we still need more, just to make sure everything goes right. We have one more task. If we consolidate now as the world is today, we'll have problems later. We have one more war to fight.

- The religion. Yes, the religion has to be destroyed and rebuilt. But it cannot be rebuilt until we have the perfect genome. So we destroy it down to the base, and wait for science to do its part in history. Should I go to the pope and ask for the tiara?

- Something, like that, yes. There is no Judaism, no Muslims, so it would be easy to steer the churches into the trap of uniting into one. Then we deal with that one left, with no followers. Because as soon it is united, it will be strange for everybody. The church won't have any power anymore. They don't know that yet. So work on it. Now everybody is busy with the reorganizations, so don't pay too much attention on the matter of religion.

- I can televise some lectures from the Academy. That will unite the Churches. OK. We started the research on the freezing. I do not know if we'll ever have results. Great brains are working on it, also on the research of the perfected genome. There is a long way ahead us. Now every female has received her shock, so all of them are bisexuals. We have just cleared the way for the real progress to come. High politics is no more. You'll be bored to death.

- May be so, Colonel. I worked for the elimination of the politics as we knew it. The research is the main importance from now on. Money is no problem. Do what you can. It has to be done. I'm going to build the skyscraper. Dear, what is the strength of the NPF?



Say at the age of 16. It gives them comradeship and new adventures.

- And lots of sex, darling, I would say, lots of good sex. It is an essential need at that age. It will build cohesion and knowledge. Yes, we better make that law, darling.

- We do not just make those mandatory laws anymore. This, for example is not essential for the state. It can be done by popular demand. So you can start the propaganda in this direction and if the people agree, we can write it down. The dictatorship is still fully in place, but it is for the people, not against the people. If somebody doesn't want to go, then she got to have the right to choose not to go. It can be achieved without law, without discrimination. I can tell this on TV, and we're going to see the reactions. This show the NPF put on today has more attractiveness than a compulsory law would have. Some won't go just because it is mandatory to go. We'll have better results by making it a good thing to participate in. The High Council has 8 members and the President now: the 4 emperors, the NPF, the Marshal of the

Army, the State Security, which is Felix, the Officers' Corps, which is the Marshal of the Logistics. He is still very important, because he has to incorporate the new territories, and reorganize the existing systems. Besides, he teaches the technical things to the officers. But you are the one in charge of the decisions made by the logistics. He is the hardware and the software, but you drill the human power to handle both and more. You teach them, you test them, and you will appoint them. Well, I still have to sign some papers at the end.

- It means you have to make him a member of the Council, darling. We already have had the session, so maybe next time, I would say. It doesn't matter much. Everybody knows who makes the real decisions. What a shame that Helene is forbidden to enter the contest this year. But she is showing off like never before. And here comes the King of England, the emperors and their wives, and other dignitaries. We'll have to have a bigger table, darling. Finally we can have an unofficial friendly chat. Come, my dearests, the waiters will make room for everybody; nice to have you all here in this absolutely beautiful weather and view.

- Good day, Sir, Queen, Colonel. After the show we decided to stay one more day to experience the life in this Capital of the World. The contest hasn't commenced yet, has it? Sergeant, will you buy voting tickets for all of us here? I wouldn't miss it for a million. I just love to watch these beautiful creatures. Feodor is very happy for it too. You enjoy it, Jadwiga?

- The beauty is overflowing today, Kate. Look, every contestant is naked. Jesus, why is it that one just cannot get enough of this spectacle of the naked girls and why everything else becomes boring after a while? I mean the mountains, the nature can be very satisfying, but after a while it will bore you, while this sight never gets you bored.

- I say if a terrorist decided to get his job done easily, this would be his best occasion. All the world-leaders are together in one open place. It is very unwise for us to show up here, Felix.

- The typical military thinking, Marshal. I am here. Everybody in this Square is under very close surveillance. My men and girls are among the multitude and snipers on the top of the buildings, and they'll kill without warning. We are safer here than anywhere else. The view of those beauties, and the question of never be bored with it, yes, I am interested too. Is there an explanation for it?

- But nothing could be simpler. You are looking at the ontological origin and cause of the aesthetical as such, as concept. The conceptual mother of all, what we call beautiful or ugly, so the aesthetic as such; the reason that we have this concept that we see something nice or not nice ontologically originates in what you are looking at. The naked female body in bloom it is. How the hell can I make myself any clearer? The girl's body is the origin of aesthetics. It is about the same question as why the sugar is sweet. Ontical, material base, that is why.

- May we get some more information, Colonel? There have been quite a number of books written on the subject of aesthetics. What I mean it cannot be so simple, whatever you tried to convey to us. Please, be more specific, we are not geniuses, well; I'm speaking for me only.

- Most of those books are all in the category of trumpery. Those're writings of the blunt, who call themselves learned men to have followers; the sexy-boy syndrome they suffering from.

(- Boys, can you put it on TV? Broadcast it now.

- Yes, Sir, it is done from the beginning.)

- One would consider it a little strong critic of the intelligent or learned men.

- Long time ago, but long after Plato and Aristotle, so-called learned intelligent men seriously debated the question, how many angels can dance on the head of a pin. Intelligent men ad-

vised the great Queen Isabella not to finance the journey of Columbus, because the Earth is flat and the ships will fall at one point into nothingness. Wise men are praying today in the churches all over the world to some unseen, unknown being for help, not realizing that what they're doing is a paradoxical thing to do. It is as stupid and idiotic as anything can be, and these so called wise and intelligent learned men are doing it day after day without thinking about it. Praying is nothing else than telling the more, the most intelligent, the omniscient being what he has to do. Nobody is realizing that if the praying is valid, then God is a non-existent being, and if God exist, then praying is a completely imprudent thing to perform. Those men also call themselves learned and intelligent. The wrongly named philosophers too, are foolish bunch with similar facility or talent. What every philosophy has to comprehend is that without the recognition of the material base every concept is invalid, useless and unnecessary.

The discovery of the material base gives an immediate solution to the problem, and this material base originates in the genome. Every concept we have can be traced back to the functions and workings of the genes and no, we don't just catch concepts somehow. Sergeant, ask Helene to come here just as she is, naked. Back in the ages the sexual evolution played a trick on the creatures that developed into mankind later. Evolution can go in any direction, and whichever variety of genome is adequate with the surroundings, will survive. Without the impact and check of the environment, the evolution would have developed a much more colourful life. Nature, the genes and the environment together have played a trick. The females had to make sure they get the best genes from the men. For this they had to show that they are capable of giving birth easily, they will have enough milk to feed the babies and they can carry them on the journeys. They had to do this to become worthy to fight for and spend time with them for the men. So the genes start producing hormones at the age of puberty which hormones transform the girlish body into a womanish body. Come, Helene, dear. The fat of the girlish body rearranges from the middle to the top here and bottom here as you can see, turn around, by the order of the genes and this is the work of the hormones. It lies. It cheats. It makes the bosom much bigger, like it would be filled withudder, the milk producing agent. It makes the bottom also bigger like it would be muscle for the task of carrying babies. It makes the waist narrow, showing that the woman is not pregnant, so the man will have his own genes to multiply with that woman. The whole process is a lie. Something has to be understood. Nature doesn't think, but whatever it does surely can be confused with some kind of thinking. That is the reason why we cannot really understand nature without switching from the causal to the teleological thinking. Nature's local environment chooses the individual to die out or survive and multiply according to the capabilities the genes programmed into the individual by chance. The conforming type of genome gets

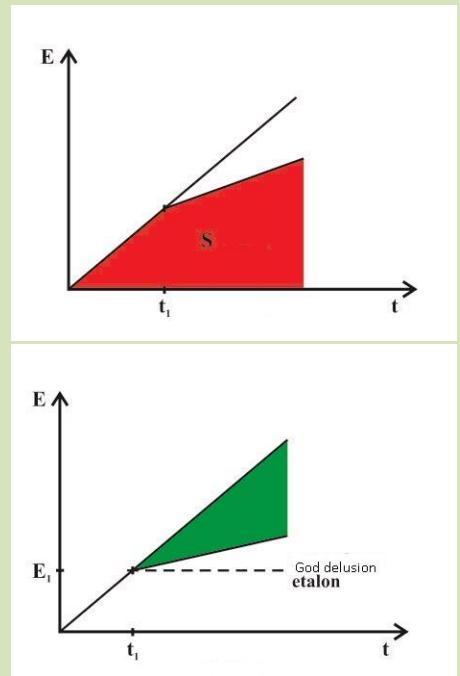


68

reproduced more often in the given locality, and finally the nonconforming genome dies out. Our genome and brain conformed to the liking of the female body. Our brain has this perfection of Helene's body, programmed into the very depth of it. This is what everybody wants, man or woman. This lie is what gives us pleasure every time, because this is the one and only that has been burned into the brain as real desire. Everything else comes after and in compliance with this desire or coveting. We never, not for one moment may forget that the real currency of life is the multiplication of the genes. Theoretically not necessarily, but as the one and only possibility so far is the multiplication of the own genes, and that is the centre of our values, and that is the material base and ontological reason for having the concept of beauty in the first place. The brain translates it for us as an urge, a longing. The subject of our desire being the lied embodied perfection for the multiplication of the genes, and that is what matters. The order of the genome in a roundabout way becomes the desire or lust for this body-form to have sex with. Now, everybody feels the lust just by looking at this body here, be it male or female. So all the bubbles of the so called learned men can be detected and traced back to the genes and the hormones, to the working of the evolution, and the result of this working burned into our brain or software. Am I clear? Of course the body of the male also can be nice, but it is not in the same category as the female body. The male masculine body is hormone-generated too, but the result of it, the big muscles is the outcome of very hard training, and can be undone by halt the training. Besides, not everybody likes the body of the body-builder male. But everyone likes the perfect body of the female, like hers. The female body is nature-created, this hour-glass or sand-glass form is essentially different from the body of the male body-builder. It is universal truth, the new result of scientific thinking, and unquestionable. We can create a much better, more universal model for the understanding of the world by this thinking. This is what indicates that a theory is true. That is why we're never get tired of looking at it, and that is why we have the concept of aesthetic beauty. The unwise professors of the social studies never understood this deeper thinking. They thought the concepts are just flying in the air and we just catch them somehow like we catch the flu. They believed we learn the aesthetic values by some mysterious social way, through infinite steps. They never could explain the origin of the concept in the first place, so who learned it first and from whom? Typical foolhardiness, never copy that. Very primitive they were and very silent they are nowadays. Peacocks, they never learned real science, and they wanted proof of this ontological base, while they've never provided proof of their idiocies. There is no further proof needed. They couldn't ever comprehend the ontological model-base, so the playing with the words what they were doing. Even Kant realized that we are all born with some kind of a preconception of categories, and as every great thinker, he was right, but not knowing about the genes and the programme the genes placed into us, he couldn't go any further. We are just the product of the genes; the body was created by the genes for the genes, not for us, not for the personality or memory we define ourselves by. To be more precise, it is the RNA what is in the very centre of life, the major beneficiary of life and creator of life as such, but it would take us a little far now. It is not the individual body what really matters in the game of life. We are programmed to die; we have to die, so the genes can multiply. The brain is an analogue computer, and the products of it, the concepts, the thoughts, the feelings, we're sensing as reality. The genome builds the brain, and the brain learns much faster than the genome changes for the environment. The unlearned social-study sexy-boys made the second-

ary thing the first thing, and so they turned the whole understanding upside down, making the cause the effect and the effect the cause. There is no need to justify the base any further. You can go so far and no further. The genome is the digital, which makes the body and the hormones. The brain is the analogue, which also causes to make the hormones to influence the workings of the body and the genes. The genes can be switched off and on by the hormones, so the genome-body-brain trio is making up this cavalcade we experience as happiness or good or sadness or aesthetical or righteousness, and so on. We are just a complexity of the trio, an outcome of the effects, and not an entity as such. We become an entity only if we understand it by the rational, which is an accident of life's cavalcade in reality, and if we live according to the maximization of the potential of the system of life. Analyse first, said Descartes, then you will grasp the whole and reconstruct reality by the way of the model. Helen, dear, have a seat, darling, everybody is looking at you, no wonder.

- It was quite a performance, Colonel. So you are saying just on the side, that the Church is full of idiots? The aesthetical concept I understood. But if my understanding of the readings is right, we supposed have some kind of a concept of a God also, some God delusion, or the maximisation of the potential.



- Yes, my Queen, we have. That programme is the essence of every living creature or rather life itself. We, as part of the life itself have a conception of the zero entropy. This comes from the system of life. It is perfectly explained by the Generalissimo in his books nobody really understands, and the few of us who do, can see the whole world very differently. That is one of the reasons for having the Officers' Corps, because some of us have to govern this world according to reality and scientific values into the new age. If we take the ever rising quantity of entropy and we take the living creatures, and from those we can construct a system, and then the retardation of the incrementation of the entropy can be the energy-source or the negentropy of the new system. According to this new system, which is adequate with reality, the essence of life comes to full view, which is the maximisation of the potential, or the zero entropy, which means the same. Or looking at it from the view-point of causality or the retardation, it is the maximum retardation of the increase of the entropy. But the newly constructed system is better for the comprehension of life itself as such. In this we change from causality to teleology, which is better understood by our brain, and we never forget that the world is only so much for us as much we understand from it, or with other words, the better model we can construct the more we know. The concept of God is in us, burned into our brain, but it is a concept only. Some very unwise peacocks have made the wrong conclusion: from the objective existence of the concept in the mind they deduced the real existence of the reflection or object of the concept, outside of the mind; they embodied the concept. That is the most idiotic, illogical conclusion a philosopher can arrive at. This is the origin of the religions, and all are false, all are based on false thinking, and all have their built-in contradictions because of the illogical unwise final step. It is the same as

the credit-money was imagined to existence. Everything can be understood by just a few laws, and those laws are valid in the whole Nature. I would say to the unlearned who find thinking a too tiring occupation that they have to satisfy their built-in desire or lounging for the perfection nonetheless in easy absolute fake terms, but the false religion is most surely not the way to do it. It is a lie. Besides, in historical reality the creation of God comes from the values we have, implanted into our brain by nature, and given or transferred to a living person, the first king of the Aryan nation, and that man was named Adamu, sometimes mistaken for God, but it is a long and tiring story which is also explained by the Generalissimo. The main story is, God doesn't originate in frightening of the powers of nature. The whole Bible is a misunderstanding of long line of tales inherited over the ages and finally written down with all the mistakes. To recognize this, it is enough to read the Bible with an open mind. God as a living person comes from the Aryan mankind of Sumer, which transferred the built-in idea of God to a living king, and that was all right. He was the keeper of the potential of the society, and that is all he was. Down the generations this king somehow changed to an omnipotent being, to an abstract being, called God, but originally the living person was the first in time, and later became God by the stories told down to the generations, and finally written down by some people with the mistake included, and we inherited the mistake. I know I'm repeating myself, but it must be understood by all. God was created by humankind and not the opposite way. Besides, an omnipotent being wouldn't have created anything, because the creation itself is an imperfection. It is giving away the potential; it lets entropy have its way, destroying the work itself. It is not very smart, but in reality self-contradictory to assume God as the creator of the very imperfect World. A little thinking would make it clear for everybody. Think with open mind. The Dish of the Generalissimo is here.

- At least we know that the leadership of the world is in able hands. Thank you, Colonel.
- My pleasure, Great King.
- If we are in discussions of vast importance, can you tell something uplifting for mankind?
- My Tsarina, the research for the perfection is in progress. We are going to have the perfect genome. No deformed babies, no average or stupid kids, no sickness, malady, disease of any inherited kind will we have in the future. Only fit and able humans, free from born defections, smart and even smarter than we can imagine today. The peace and the oneness of the whole world were necessary for humankind to progress. Up till now the dumb politicians really believed that what they have been doing is the advancement. Very foolish they were, because they couldn't think ahead far enough, couldn't even solve their immediate daily problems. We are thinking ahead centuries, and everything is solved step by step on the way to perfection. The Officers' Corps is a thinking body of men and women, and this intellectual aristocracy governs now the world adequately. Now it is up to the individual to live a full and satisfactory life. Our duty is the research and the smooth running of the logistics, the perfect second nature in the sense of Schelling. What is the purpose of life anyway? Nature has its own system, and that is the retardation of the increase of entropy, and in this system there is no place for any purpose. It is a function. Purpose emerges when we change from the system of nature to the system we created, where the retardation of the increase of the entropy becomes a new system of the decrease of the entropy. It means that we are the ones who give purpose to the life. The purpose is the new maximisation of the potential of the individual and the mankind, and all this at one and the same time. Solving problems, that is the purpose of

the life of the individual. OK. It is time for the beauty contest. Sergeant, tell the contestants to come this way to collect our votes.

(- I think it will be enough of the broadcasting. Thank you, Captain. The TV can go back to the contest now. It was an uplifting performance. He has acquired followers for this.

- And enemies, we soon have to destroy. The war is on, Sir.)

- I cannot decide. These girls are just perfect. Well, nobody will call me a racist; this Brazilian creole beauty gets my vote. Here, take it my dear. You are a real wonder.

- Well, thank you, Generalissimo. And thank you Queen for your vote too. I love you both.

- My darling, what would you say if we invited this absolute gorgeous creature for a change?

- I don't think it is a good idea, dear. We cannot just order somebody to have sex with us. This is the wrong side-effect of being a leader. Besides, the security-problems are present also. Once she comes in, she cannot get out. But you can go ahead, take her to your personal staff. I mean, ask her if she wants to be in it. We are not in the Middle-Ages, dear. People are not properties today.

- I will definitely ask her, darling. Our son has to learn Portuguese too. It is a good reason.

- It definitely is. Colonel, your love for northern beauties is obvious. That was a good choice.

- What to say, Sir? I have my own preferences. It is fortunately very hard to choose. It will be a close call. So I think the first three all have to get something. The winner gets the diamond coronet. The second gets a smaller sapphire; the third one gets a ruby, with less stones. I go to the jewellery store.

- OK, fair enough.

- Darling, I think it is time to create some kind of an aristocracy. And I won't take that excuse any more. The Professors of the Universities, the Nobel-laureates, the writers, and the artists and so on all deserve to be acclaimed somehow. There are enough palaces and castles in the world uninhabited or kept by the state. The artists would need some place to create while they can take care of those buildings in the meantime. The Burgh in Vienna for example, is a museum. It is nonsense. The Chief Officers of the Army when retired are still very able to become barons or counts and leaders of the local community. We need the parties, the social life. It gives pleasure and reason to live. Why work if you don't enjoy life in the same time?

- You have your point. OK. With the other kings you choose the candidates, my officers will choose the places for residences. I will appoint a liaison officer and a budget. You create princes, earls, counts, barons, nobles. Not many. And the title will not be inherited unless the offspring is able to keep up the standards. Are you satisfied my dear?

- Thank you, darling. You won't be disappointed. Jadwiga, Kate, we have something to do.

(- OK. So at the third Constantine-Day the Colonel started the war on the religion and the church, and the nobility's creation got a green light. The major point is that the research went ahead with full steam, no expense spared, for the genetics and the freezing of the body for preservation. The building of the skyscraper was also decided upon, the plans worked out. The babies were born and growing, may I ask who won the beauty-contest? Never mind. The aristocracy were created. The son of the Great King became the Prince of Transylvania; your son became the Prince of The Hague, your first daughter Princess of Byzantium and so on.

- I didn't mean to create titles for children, but it was OK among the many other aristocrats. They gave great parties, soirees, where we could go, the cream of society could come together.

er, and many important questions were solved in those parties. Just as before in the political soiree's of the State. And yes, the demolition of the religious institutions has started. As we have foreseen, the different churches have closed their ranks and by the instigations of our agents they created the One Church under the newly reformed religion, or they rather just compromised the old religions under the Pope in the Vatican. It wasn't Catholic, wasn't Lutheran, evangelist, etc., wasn't anything anymore. The churches were still open, but in response to the Colonel's lectures televised, less and less believers went there. The youngsters totally deserted the churches. They had their God in the person of the Colonel. One day we thought the time is ripe for the action. So I went on television.)

- The four empires were not built by the wish of any living God. They were built by hard work and the power of the logic. The world is a liveable place today in spite of the wish of the Church and religion. The Church never has announced anything against the old system, so one way or another, the Church has endorsed the old system, which was inhumane. The new world is the creation of the concept of perfection in us, which is the origin of the God-consciousness, but the exact opposite of the concept of the institutionalized religion's living God, which is a grave mistake. There are other Earthy problems too. These show us the profit-hunger and the cheating of the institutionalized church. We have nicely asked the Church to show us their bookkeeping, and they refused to do so. We have knowledge of major defrauding of the people who have given their contribution for the upkeep of the church and humanitarian purpose. We have reason to believe that the money was used for the personal enrichment of the high officials of the Church. For the reason of being unreasonable in logic and defrauding the people in their mind and money I have ordered the Church to suspend its operation until the books have been examined and the charge of fraud resolved. I ordered the authorities of the State to take actions and investigate the problem. So I announce that the churches thorough the world should be closed for sermons until further notice. The buildings are open as museums. I have spoken.

Every church was closed down, and the whole leadership of the one Church has been ordered to go the Vatican. The Generalissimo and the Colonel landed in Rome, and drove to the Vatican. Felix was already there. Nobody was there on the streets to protest. It was a good sign. The people didn't really care about religion any more, or so it seemed. The cardinals and bishops were together in a big room.

- Gentlemen, your time is up. Of course no harm will be done to any of you, so please listen carefully. You couldn't defend the ideology against the logic of the natural mind. We have no use for the institutional religion any longer, and telling the truth, never had. Teaching and giving alimony is not religion. You all will be taken to the islands of the Pacific, where the weather is always right, you will have your food and everything you ever need and everything you ever lounged for. You will be the guests of the NPF. The Pope will sign the dissolution of the Church and you all will make your mark on that document.

- The Pope has already signed the document, Sir.
- Thank you, Felix. You made the good old irrefutable offer to him?
- If something works just fine all the time, why change it?

- OK, so please gentlemen, you are civilians now, here is the document, you sign it, and the NPF will take you straight to Paradise... Thank you for your cooperation, the charges of defrauding the people will be dropped. You are all honorary guest of the state. Have a nice life, gentlemen.

- Finally they can enjoy themselves among pussies, asses and tits.

- Something, like that. Well, this war has been won also. Everything is in order, we didn't leave enemy behind as never did. Now, what we are going to do, Felix, is up to us.

- It was always that way.

- What I mean is the Vatican is without an owner. The Colonel said it would be the best if the Security of the State would have it. The Castel Sant'Angelo is empty just across the Square. You can have that for training, drilling or other purposes. Good for prison too. Take the Vatican for HQ; it gives you and your officers and Force an extra esteem. But today with the Colonel we will look around a little here, we will select items to be taken to Byzantium to the Museum, and we are just fricken childishly curious what can we find here. It may be two days. You make your arrangements in the meantime. Finally you have a reputable place, Byzantine territory. By the way, Felix, last time I was looking at my monitor it seemed like some strange works being done in the Peruvian and Columbian fields where the coca-fields should be much smaller by now. Was it my vision that played a game with my senses?

- Yes, it was. Your vision is bad. It was just business as usual.

- You mean to tell me that there are no too many workers and there is no too much cocaine?

- Your vision is playing games with your senses, and that is all I am saying. You will thank me later, but let me do what has to be done. And that is the end of it. Thanks for the place. I am always right. Trust me, as you've always trusted me.

- There will be no more questions. OK, Colonel, let's see the Vatican's inside.

(- What happened to the drug-business at that time? I mean was there drug on the street?

- No, we sold drugs in the pharmacies much cheaper than before on the street, safe quality, and very interestingly the trade was down. I mean anyone could go and buy cocaine in the pharmacy without showing ID. Illegalize something, and there is a boom, a want created immediately. Legalize it, and nobody cares. If some people wanted to have some for a party, they could have it. Otherwise the people were busy with real life, so who needs artificial high all the time if the reality gives a good opportunity to be high and advance in society? The usage of drugs is the sure sign of the decline of the society. Ours was in full bloom with freedom for all. We supposed to have a small field worked for the pharmacies, so when I saw the very extensive work on the very large fields of coca, I wondered. Later he proved to be right of course. We're going there later. But now let's go back to the story if you don't mind.)

Two days they spent in the Vatican. Many relics, treasures went to Byzantium, also books, paintings, and so on. It was great pleasure to read or even just hold those books, bulls, the relics of history. The historians will have the same great pleasure when they can have those documents freely to research.

- Colonel, I think this victory over the religion was too easy. The people are in need of some kind of magic, religion. Later maybe we'll have some perfection. I'm afraid it isn't over yet.

- I was thinking of some half-way solution. We teach some security-people first we can trust to speak in front of the believers like they are the new illegitimate priests. I can write some sermons which will satisfy those believers, and make the way to the scientific thinking. Felix, your officers just walk up to the podium and behave like rebels, and read what they receive from us. We have to make this transition somehow smooth. We let, or rather won't punish anybody who speaks up in the churches. Make the listeners believe it is real.

- All right, no problem. So with the Vatican I become the Pope. I thought about becoming many callings, but this one, I never guessed. Nice. All over the world we'll take over the churches then. Just like the Ohrana in the pre-1917 Russian Empire. We will be the revolutionaries, so every revolutionary comes to us. We can handle it. Send the sermons, and consider it done. Later I can find some smart young students for revolutionaries. The people always need some rebellion. Perfect, at least I have something to do.

Everything went accordingly. The Colonel wrote some, he wrote some, the new priest very quickly understood the point they had to say, so there was no need for writing any more, Felix had something to do again, and there was no problem. Less and less people went to the churches, mostly the older generation and some of the young revolutionaries. They were steered back to the society, no violence needed, but leftish liberals had to be dealt with.

Suddenly he felt emptiness. There was nothing important to do. No high or even low politics, no wars to win, very soon he felt useless. He tried to learn the science of genetics, but it was hopeless to try to compete with anyone in the field, or even understand the whole spectrum of the science advanced. He was waiting for the researchers to produce something. Instead of holding up the scientists and to make obvious for everybody that he isn't really up to date in the field, he rather went to the rare books, the treasures of history, and flew around the world for pleasure. And pleasure it was. The Colonel's dream have come true, great hordes of beef in Africa, Asia and Patagonia, endless fields of cereals worked by machines; the food was there for everybody almost for free. The working hours have been lowered even more, so everybody could learn or play more. The universities were not free to attend, but a student could finance it easily even by working couple of hours a week, or by obtaining credit, or just being very smart, when it was free for him or her. The logistics had more and more females. The Officers' Corps received girls also before, and only the knowledge mattered, not the gender. The logistics had the work done. He had great pleasure with his son and daughters, because the children with the Colonel were all girls. He loved them, but we are going too far ahead. It was at the **fourth** Constantine-Day when the High Council was in session. The Colonel was ordered to be present. After the regular business the Generalissimo spoke.

- We have one more point to discuss and decide on. I propose that the Colonel should be an elected member of the High Council. Who is with me on this matter?

- I oppose.

- I oppose too. It is completely useless to look at me like that, Colonel, I oppose. Nobody is with you on this one, Sir.

- May I ask for the reason?

- He is a Colonel. Nobody can be a member of the High Council under the rank of General.

- Then I move to promote the Colonel to the rank of Byzantine General. Against it? Nobody. So ordained. Now I move to elect the General for a full member of the High Council. Against it? Nobody. So ordained. Now I move to appoint the General, full member of the High Council for my General Deputy. Against it? Nobody. So ordained. Congratulations, General. Your new uniforms are in your room already. With the matters resolved the Council is adjourned. We have a great festivity to attend.

- Andreas, it was necessary to creep on me? I almost had a heart attack. But thank you all.

- You deserved it, General. We have almost nothing to do. Without the creation of the aristocracy we would be bored to hell. Your logistics working like charm. This is your world; you have to be in charge of it. We thank you. You reorganized the economy so effectively that everything is less expensive, better and profitable in the same time. It was a genius move to order the factories to make high-standard items without the hassle and commercial and bureaucracy and competition, so the common people can have everything cheaper, and the luxury items made by smaller companies and artisans. They love you for it. We love you.

The uniform of the Byzantine General was a creation of a real artist. He had it in many different colours, with real diamond stars, and for the light coloured uniforms with sapphire stars insignia. Not as grandiose as the Generalissimo's stars, but large enough. Another great festivity was going on. The members of the Council occupied different terraces now, they liked their own courts around. They were right.

- My dear, the aristocracy was a good idea. I would be bored to death without it. The problem is that I see the emperors so often, that now we have enough of each other. Great concerts, great theatres, the castles are kept in immaculate order and care, cost less than before. I see the Brazilian beauty did accept your offer. Hello, my dear. Our son speaks Portuguese too.

- Sir, the Queen is very good to me. Takes loving care, and I love her, and your son too.

- It is a pleasure to have her, a great pleasure I would say. She gives it like nobody before.

- I am happy to hear that, my dear. You take her to the parties, I assume.

- But of course. I have these three girls for my personal aids, rather for friends. We do everything together, including the parties, with this northern beauty, this Thai, and this Brazilian, in perfect union. Girls, if you want to participate in the beauty-contest, just go ahead. The sky-scraper is standing there, it is an extraordinary view; exactly the perfect height. When will it be ready?

- Maybe half year more. I decided to occupy the upper level. The whole level is one very large flat with the rooftop as terrace and helicopter-station. I'll have my own terrace-garden, the rest is for everybody. You can have your own suite too. The General is coming. How beautiful is he in that uniform. Thank you for the new design, it's a masterwork.

- That what the aristocracy is for. Arts, nobility, good taste, good manners are all important. I am happy for her. General, you are the star. The people love you, now everybody knows that you became the General Deputy, so it is your day. You are 21, you have the undisputed most beautiful girl for lover, and you are the leader of the world in practice, basically. Can you handle it, darling?

- Oh, yes, I can. I always wanted to do something I've read once in a Hungarian book. Now I am going to do it. Watch me... Folks, people of the World, and here, people of Byzantium! I am 21 today, and progressed to the rank of the Byzantine General. Thank you. I have to tell

you some great news. There has been a break-through in the science. Any girl can have the best genome possible today. That is available now. Also, very soon we will have the perfect genome, laboratory-made, and the future generations will be perfect specimen. Now, this is great news. You girls, over the age of 16, you all get a year off whatever you're doing, studying, if you go and join the NPF. Your time has been arrived. There you will learn comradeship, duty, and the love of life. I don't want to see anybody in the universities without serving a year in the NPF before. Am I understood? I can't hear you, girls. OK. That is better. Now, what I always wanted to do. Give me a whisky. Now, the restaurants, stores, give everybody a whisky or any other drink anyone wants, on my credit. You have it all? All right, now Servus, people. I drink for your health and happiness.

- Servus, General. We drink for your health and happiness.

- It is so good to be loved. Come up here, my dear Helene. No problem, none needs clothes with this figure. Constantine, your heroic act didn't vanish. This is your city, Constantine. We'll have the perfect genome, I promise you. And here is the closest perfection. We measured the activation energy of many genomes, but I won't bore you with it. Hers is the most perfect genome, and your daughter can be just like her. Please, applause my darling. Thank you. And thank you, Generalissimo for this great Age of Science. Without you, we all would be in the slums. This Constantine-Day is open on this Fourth Year of the New Age. And this is official dating from now on; Anno Byzantium, AB instead of AD. Have a great time, folks.

- This was something, darling, I would say. He just started a new age-calculation.

- My child and I love him. This was an appearance of a real leader. Your NPF better be ready for the reception of the multitudes. Who needs laws with a leader like him? General, Helene, if what you have just said is true, and I assume it is, then we better start training the doctors everywhere for the onrush for the better genes, and the members of the NPF will get it first.

- Yes, Boss, although they have to be familiar with the process first. In the NPF we will popularise it, and we have to fight against the resistance of the men. But I don't see the possibility of any major uprising. It would be nice if you visited the clinic and distributed some awards among the scientists, possibly in the Castle and linked with a party for them. I'll have the list. The major point is that from now on the inferior individuals can have very nice and smart girls and boys, but mostly girls. The new family-type is the two women – one man, even in the High Society. The girls are almost twice as many as boys. Soon we will solve the self-contradiction of the society. Now everything is in the fluid state; it is the beginning, so we have some problems in hand, but time and the new researches will solve everything. No need for political intervention. It is also time the Thai Master-sergeants became Ensigns. Sergeant, you are all having been promoted to the rank of Ensign. You all deserved it. What else is there to attend to? Nothing. The economy is on the rail, organized for the less population, the big factories are diversified and profitable, and everything can be handled by the Corps from here; standardising, optimising and cooperation in the industry, imagination in the small companies. It is perfect for everybody; we can concentrate on real problems now.

(- OK. The genome first was cleaned up, because like the hard-drive of a computer, it included many fragments, unused, but confusing old remains of the millions of years, and this rubbish-DNA caused problems for the RNA, for the amino-acids, for the proteins to be synthesized right, and this caused sickness and the deformation of the body and mind. At this stage

they still used the DNA of the body; it wasn't a fully artificial genome. They have taken the different genomes, measured the strength of it, and this is a very fine measurement, the calorimetric chemical measurement, whoever wants to know more, she can read about it elsewhere. The point is, there were differences; not every genome is equal, and there are inferior and superior genomes chemically, and these genomes produce inferior or superior individuals in body and mind. The liberal philosophy was totally demolished in practice, but nobody really cared about that rubbish idea of the past anymore, anyway. It was stupid from the beginning. You awarded some scientists, had a nice party for them, and the researchers worked more with full steam. You played with the kids, the General lectured the officers, oversaw the research, you became bored, and the sky-scraper was finished finally one day.

- Basically, yes. I moved in to the top floor, which was an open space, as I like it, with all the communications ever needed, and the General occupied the office and the whole space in the Castle. My new flat was much bigger than the one in the Castle. The lower floors were given to the logistics, so they could work on the problems to solve at home too, and were given two exotic beauties for personal care. Everybody was very happy with this arrangement. The leaders of the shifts became Byzantine Majors, the level of knowledge raised to the level that they could solve almost anything, closely working with the logistics of the Empires and the lower levels. Most of the General's presentations at the Academy were televised. More and more girls went to the NPF, and received the ever perfected genome after serving. The population have changed slowly but surely. The **fifth** Constantine-Day has arrived.)

The usual terrace on the Square, the NPF had their presentation of wild animals; the old comrade Master-sergeant asked for and received his retirement, he married the chef of the kitchen of the Castle and opened an old-fashioned pub at the outskirt of the Downtown, where all kinds of martial-art contests were going on almost always. The sky-scraper was beautiful, 80 storey high, could be seen from anywhere in the city, from the top apartments the whole city could be seen, the outside walls being made of glass mostly. But we have gone too far now. Before the Day the General asked the Generalissimo to step in for him to lecture in the Academy, and he and the Master-sergeant drove there. They both went in to the lecture hall.

- The General sent me to give you a lecture. I hope I'm in the right place.
- And who are you, Sir, may I ask?
- I am sorry, I suppose to introduce myself first, you are right. I want to make sure, so let me find my ID and other papers. You see, I rarely use my ID, but it supposed to be tucked here somewhere. Don't laugh, my friend, it is a serious matter. Anybody could come in here; say some foolishness and what would happen then? Finally, here it is. Let me see, because even I am unfamiliar with this paperwork. The guards never asked me to show it. It says here, the rank is Generalissimo, wow, that must be a high rank and the position is here somewhere too, yes, President of the High Council of the World. Yeah, we changed the name just recently to include the NPF as well or some reason like that. We don't have many sessions if I remember right. Take a close look, young man, because I am sure you won't see this ID ever again.
- I am terribly sorry Sir I didn't recognize you immediately in civilian clothes.
- OK, so what do you want me to talk about? The General told me, you're almost done with your studies, and you soon become officers. The ontological base of the aesthetic? Done. The

righteousness as concept and self-contradiction? Done. The four different workings of the mind? Done. The fractals of history? Done. So, tell me what you don't know.

- Please, Sir, tell us about the beginnings.

- That is a large order. Well, at the beginning was the Big Bang they say, although I personally don't believe in that theory. It has more faults than the theoretical physicists ever thought about, and gives us, philosophers more problems than it ever could solve, starting with the first infinite moment. Moreover, that theory confuses the reaction energy with the activation energy when it goes backward to the first moment. But I can talk about the apeiron theory which I prefer more, where we can start from the structuration of the matter. Or God created the world in 6 days if you prefer that, but then you are in the wrong place. But may we start anywhere, we are in trouble. The beginning is the first breaking-point for the brain. We just cannot comprehend the beginning. We cannot solve the problem, and that is the solution. Philosophically it is the same value to come up with a positive solution for a given problem as to arrive at the conclusion and proof that the problem is insoluble; the human brain is capable for so much and not more; we're unable handle the infinite when it comes to reality; in mathematical theory yes, in nature, no. We have to know our limitations and we have to accept the facts. We cannot solve the second breaking-point either, which is the life, but we can handle all right both just right after the first moment. Or you didn't mean that beginning? Oh, I knew that, I understand. At the beginning of the Confederacy we had some problems, real political problems. The liberal mind of the then correct political view was that everybody is equal, life itself has a value without connections to anything else, and we were between two or three great powers, ourselves alone. But we had the ideology of today, and we wanted the world to become a better place. Or if you want me start even further back; I had the ideology myself only. Now, it must be understood that every new theory, every man with a new theory is completely alone first, opposing him everybody else of his age. Kepler was alone; Einstein was alone, and so on, without exemption. Gauss had his non-Euclidean hyperbolic geometry in his drawer for 20 years, because he was afraid of coming out with it, and at that time he was the greatest name in mathematics. When Bolyai sent him his son's geometry, then he was brave enough to come up with his own. Nobody tried to connect science and philosophy at my time. I connected the thermodynamics with the social studies by constructing a system, completely artificially, but within the permitted hypothetical premises. You all know, it was the switching from the causal to the teleological, only for the better understanding. It opened up a new world. Then we, or rather I, had the purpose of life as such, right before me. In this system the entropy decreases. The retarded entropy that is, what decreases. The working of the mind has its own story. I was thinking, why psychology is unable to solve almost any problem. They didn't read Descartes. He said analyse the complexity first, and deal with the parts first, and then try to put the parts back together. The two permitted and the two non-permitted workings of the mind immediately solved the problems of psychology and more. When we think about the laws of nature and we employ the trick of the mind to nature, it is a whole different ball-game in comparison, when we trying to induce somebody to do something for us, and that something is almost always connected with the sexual behaviour. The brain works totally differently in the two situations. It was the same way I arrived at the conclusion that entropy has nothing to do with statistics or disorder whatsoever. I'd like to quote Clausius on the creation of the concept of entropy. "I propose to name the quantity S the en-

tropy of the system, after the Greek word trope, the transformation. I have deliberately chosen the word entropy to be as similar as possible to the word energy: the two quantities to be named by these words are so closely related in physical significance that a certain similarity in their names appears to be appropriate". He gave the S sign for remembrance of Sadi Carnot. Clausius didn't really know the essence of the S, and he says so. Now, when we look at the collision of the molecules, we can analyse the second phase of the collision. At the first phase of the collision the two molecules get close according to the kinetic energy they have. The electrons are deformed and the two atoms are stationary at the peak of the collision. The kinetic energy transforms to static energy. Now comes the second phase. Here the electrons try to get back to their original equilibrium, and the atoms will move to the directions where they came from. But there we can discover two very different processes, and they should be analysed as such. The two actions are the structuration of the electrons and the movement of the atoms or molecules. These two actions proceed according to their own different laws. The electron-deformation is a static force, which cannot give back all its energy fully to the atoms while it goes back to the equilibrium state, because as soon as the atoms are moving, picking up their kinetic energy again the force moving them decreases by the square of the distance between the atoms. So a small amount of energy always stays in the electrons within the atoms, because of the two different kind of laws that govern the two different processes cannot be synchronized. The electrons trying to regain the original form or state, and the atoms speeding up, are the two different actions. That remaining energy is the heat. The heat is not the velocity of the atoms as the physicists said; it is as stupid as anything can be. For this theory we have to acknowledge the structure of the electron first; it is a little different from the theory of the physics. Heat is some remaining energy after the unsynchronized collision, and every collision is unsynchronized. That is the ontological reason for the entropy also. The time periods are different in the two kinds of processes, so we have the entropy as a result of the laws of nature, and entropy is ineluctable, inevitable necessity, and not some statistical something by chance. Physics could never have solved the problem mathematically, and Boltzmann went mad literally and committed suicide maybe because of the insolubility contradiction between the energetic and the statistical view, and too bad they didn't know about my analysis. I solved it, and the theory of the entropy is a whole different ball-game today. The Third Law of Thermodynamics tells us that the entropy becomes zero if the heat dispersion happens at the absolute zero Kelvin. Now, I made a little appendix to it. The entropy zero at the speed of light. You figure out why. Something must be understood. Whatever can be analysed should be analysed, no matter who opposes the new theory; if it is true, it will become common knowledge, and the opponents will be stupid cows at the end. The science and the social ranks are two different games. The first mind-working is the causal, and it is concentrated on the laws of nature. The second one is the teleological, and it is concentrated to the concurrence with others, the agreement with others in order to have followers, because it has nothing to do with the truth, only has to do with the conquering of the minds of others. Very sharp distinction should be made, and the social studies never have and never could have solved the problems of society, because they always mixed the two kinds of mind-workings. The paradox of the elected leaders is a good example. If you want the society to function, you need the understanding of the laws which govern it, and you need causal creator mind to create the frame-work scientifically in order to the teleological conqueror be as

free as possible, so you don't elect politicians, but educate officers to do the task, like we do it here and now. The real happiness is the conquering, that should be liberated, so the government must use the creator mind for that, not the conqueror. But the elected were stupid; they needed the tail of the peacock and were totally unfit to govern a country. So we had to get rid of those peacock sexy-boys, and we had our movement, our terror, our revolution, the war, and the Confederation. It was a necessity in every way, in every step; the laws of the society made us do it, because the laws are in work even if we don't know about those laws. I recognized the laws and I went ahead according to those laws from the beginning, always choosing the appropriate action to further the theory in practice, so the world is a much better place now. The secret is to analyse the complexity and understand the whole. It is called real philosophy. History has become an equilibrium state, or will become very soon. We can tell that only a little later, looking back on us say in a century or so. The world will change a lot.

- With all due respect, Sir, wasn't it the chance of history only, and later introduced as necessities planned and carried out in advance? So wasn't it a posteriori?

- Young man, I was there when the Generalissimo handled the maps with the new borders after the war to the Generals. Those maps were dated four years before that date. There was nothing in the history of those times what were not planned well before the actions. I was with him all the time as body-guard and comrade. I have seen everything; there was no secret I didn't know about. The whole history of the last decade has nothing to do with chances or randomness or accidents. Those fractals were eliminated by well-planned systematic application of the force of the mind and brute power applied for that end. Of course the war and revolution are fluid things; tactics can be invented and changed in the progress.

- I tell you what we are going to do. The Master-sergeant will retire soon. He will have enough time to lecture you and other classes of about the history of those heroic times. His pub is also an open place for you, and perfect for telling stories between two boxing-matches. It will be a real men-place. I think I'll be there very often. So what we did was the transformation of the critical state of the history to the stable equilibrium state of the thermodynamic system. We had the knowledge, the strength and the will-power to do it. We almost closed down history. We almost finished history. The new state you living in today is the beginning of something different than the history as we knew it before. The Master-sergeant says he does envy the new generations, but never would give up the experience, the fighting of the heroic era when we were in the beginning of the process of changing history. I agree with him. It was an adrenalin-full experience on the streets. Well, if you have no other question...

- Sir, what would you ask the General to make him think a little deeper? I mean he just cannot be confused; he is so logical and omniscient that we feel inferior when he lectures us. We are very proud to become his officers, and we all know that we can go to him for advice when in trouble. Nothing confuses him. But we would like to see that he is human too.

- I would ask him if the river makes the riverbed, or the riverbed makes the river. It is a classic. You can think about it too. OK, visit the Master-sergeant for the stories and martial-arts. He won't really retire ever; he has and keeps his licence to kill. He is one of the three people in the world who has that license, so be careful. Well, a little joke never hurts.

They were sitting on the terrace on the Day. The Square was filled with people, etc.

- Beautiful day, Boss, as always. The little ones are here too with their birth-mothers. Believe or not, the oldest one understood that paradox of James you were so good to suggest to the cadets to ask me for confusion purposes. It didn't work.

- No way. Four years old. Very smart kid, beats me in chess, but hardly believable.

- What is that paradox, General?

- It is an old story, Julie. The American pragmatism is a typical American invention. Once they wanted to solve the problems of the world, and as always, got nowhere with it. The concept was that the world is what we make out of it. They constructed a model, and wanted to reform the world according to that model. You see, we can start with the concept as Hegel did, and construct the world according to the essence or meaning of the concept. Or we can take the reality and try to discover the ways to make it better by understanding it. Either way we'll arrive to a model somewhere on the way. We can look at the model as a transitional construction which varies with the new facts and truth we discover later. Or we can look at it as final in any given stage, and we try to reform or deform the reality around us to comply with that one given model we pronounce true. The latter was the pragmatism. So the river makes the riverbed or the riverbed makes the river? This paradox comes up necessarily at one phase, because you just cannot deform the reality as you wish after a point of no return. The logic itself isn't final either. Hegel had thought of it as final, and it was kind of final at the time he lived, and he modelled the human logic and got far enough with it by constructing the world as reality follows from the logic. But later we discovered thermodynamics; and the logic of the thermodynamics was a little different. Every positive has a negative attributed to it in the old logic, and every negative has a positive. But in the thermodynamics every positive has a negative but not every negative has a positive. That is the origin of the entropy. So the pragmatism constructed the model and made it final and wanted to transform the world according to the model. That was the problem of the ancient Romans too. Both made a big mistake, and both failed, but their wrong thinking never disappeared. America wanted to form the world for and up to its outdated and never proven model, and got itself into big troubles. Anyway, the point of the story is that my daughter was there, because she likes to be with me most of the time, and she says to me, it was clear and understandable. Then I asked her to repeat what I said and she gave me back most of it right.

- Unbelievable. I'll talk to the children much more. Do you like to be the boss of the Castle?

- Not bad. I moved into your place. It is bigger, better. But what you have up there is heaven for you. Finally alone, the officers won't bother you as much, and still have all the communication and office space. The Nobel-laureates can visit you; the Academicians can visit you and give you the newest results. We are much closer for resolving the freezing problem too. OK, I have to say something, and we have this day wrapped up.

- Darling, what was that righteousness you or the General mentioned earlier? Because if the men do not raise their own children after the introduction of the artificial genome, then they might have the right to feel cheated out of something. Or am I just silly again? We have large enough audience, and if you want the TV will be here too. I am asking this because I have heard many people arguing about it.

- That is a question we have to address. We wait for the General, and for the TV. We have to close it and solve it once and for all. Your three beauties are unmatched. What would you say if we went up to my apartment after the festivities here? I think it is time we get acquainted.

- You are getting younger and younger, Darling. That serum they give you makes wonders. What do you say, ladies, do we visit the Generalissimo this night?
- We always wanted to have sex with him. Of course we go. It is only one level up where we are. The General is here, the TV following him. Is he popular or God?
- Both, I would say. We were discussing some serious matters, General. I think it would be fruitful if the TV stayed for a while. The Generalissimo is just about to have a saying in the matter of righteousness. So I ask again, do men have the right to feel cheated and pushed aside by the introduction of the artificial genome?
- Yes, they do have the right. And no, it will be a better state of affairs for them as well. Confusing, am I? It is not an easy question, with no easy answer. Not only because we do not know the answer, but because the answer and the whole situation carries a self-contradiction within. The entire of the literature and romances and poetry mankind wrote for thousands of years are nothing else than continuously trying to solve this contradiction in a particular situation. And why the literature is so rich? It is a never-ending story, because it is about a self-contradiction, and so insoluble in general, if we think in one dimension only. So they can create all kinds of stories, positioning the actors, and it is always new and at the same time it is all the same. The self-contradiction is insoluble by definition, so it is not the stupidity or the shortage of one's knowledge which makes it insoluble, similar to the problem of the point of the beginning. The right itself, the concept of the right comes from somewhere. The General ably unfolded the origin of the aesthetic values, the origin of the concept, and he traced it back to the genes and the playing's of nature with the human mind. Right, as a concept, the fact that we have this concept and we understand this concept as such, completely indifferent from the particular rights, also can be traced back to the same roots. Every concept can be traced back to the genes, and must be traced back to the genes; we have nowhere else to go any deeper. If we stop half-way we have a false starting point, we have a surely false premise, no matter what it might be or how nice it sounds. But this time we have it a little differently. I am talking about reproduction, the multiplication of the genes as it was before and still is basically. I am talking about sexuality, the act. Man wants an able woman to multiply his genes with. The sex is the only way to do so, and the order of nature has burned into our hardware and still functioning in the depth of our brain as valid software. There are two orders of nature for every living creature. *Multiply the genes and live to multiply the genes.* These are two contradictory orders, but that is a different problem from ours now. So who should multiply and what kind of genes? The strategy of the man and the woman is different in this case; well, I believe in many other cases as well, but we concentrate on the sexual act now. If a woman cheats on a man, that is a greater offence, and in history it was always judged as greater offense than the opposite way. Men could have cheated much more freely. Why? Well, because if a woman has someone else's child, the husband has wasted all of his lifetime to raise and multiply someone else's genes. The woman is always sure that she has half, or rather true that a fraction, close to half the own genes in her child, but the man can never be sure of it. And this software was written well before the invention of the DNA-test and the brain somehow just cannot override it effectively even today. So the man in this sense has the right to impose a much greater confinement on his wife than she has on him. The liberal philosophies were wasted when wanted equal rights in this matter too. Actually from the standpoint of the orders of nature in this dimension, the woman has no right whatsoever to

cheat on her husband. But it is only one side of the story. We have another order too, or if we don't want to have or handle too many orders, we can diversify the one we were talking about. Multiply the genes, but which genes? Of course everybody wants to multiply his own genes, because the order comes from the genes within us in general, and there was no other possibility. I cannot multiply someone else's genes, only my own. But the main and first essence of life as such is the maximisation of the potential. The woman who cheats on her husband follows this order. She wants the best genes available for her child in order to satisfy the main order of the living systems. This is another dimension of life than the one we were talking about before. Of course she has no idea what she is doing, she just feels an urge to have sex with another man who is better, stronger, healthier than her husband is; otherwise the whole risky operation would have been wasted. They call this love or lust or passion; the girls can invent categories very quickly, didn't you all know that? On the side it can be said that the women always find a good excuse to commit this act, and blame it on their husband when it comes to light, but the logic of a woman is an amazingly strange subject to follow rationally. Back to our business, if we take a close look at the men, who the women cheat on their husbands with, the one who she wants to have sex with, he always have better genes than the husband has or closely so. And she is almost always fertile at the time of the cheating, even if she is not aware of it. It is the good of mankind she takes the risk for in search of the better genes to maximise the potential of the child and trough it the potential of the whole humanity. She is only following her instinct; she just feels she wants to have sex with that man, an urge, which is the emotional appearance, embodiment or expression of a greater order, a more noble order. If the inferior men had their way to limitlessly multiply their genes, the result will be an inferior population as the whole. Exactly this happened through the ages up till our revolution. The meek have really almost inherited the Earth. The Church had to be dissolved for this end, and we are much better off without their idiocies. The self-contradiction is the right of the men to multiply their own genes and the right of the women to choose and have the best genes possible, and this contradiction couldn't be resolved until now, and we'll solve it only in the future for good. What we really want is a society without self-contradictions, so I appeal to the men of today to let the best genes to be multiplied, and let the women to have the best genes available, because it is a losing game for the men anyhow. The women will have the best genes available at any cost anyway, and they do not need men anymore nor for having a child nor for pleasure. Every girl is bisexual today, and that is the best for everyone. They can love each other shamelessly, as it is natural. So the best strategy of the men would be to let the women be women, take care of them, and this way the women will love them, and believe me, it is much better to raise a smart child without diseases, deformation, and sickness than take the chances with their own fragmented genes against nature and against a superior genome. When you raise that child with the perfected genes, she or he will be your child, because mankind is one culturally; some wave connects us all, and we are much better off if we ride this wave than being selfish in the long run. The order to multiply the genes was in the past understood as multiply your own; it just couldn't be otherwise. But now it is different. We are living in a rational age. The brain can override the order of the genes, besides that order doesn't say a thing about the origin of the genes. So why not multiply the best ones, both genders? Now we satisfy the order of life itself and we want humankind, the future generations to be smarter, healthier and stronger than we are. A little rational thinking will

resolve the long-time self-contradiction, but again, without some compromise and act we won't go anywhere but backwards. We always have to invest energy into the system to gain potential or negentropy. It means duty. We live in a transitional age with its ups and downs; this and the future generations will understand what is right and what is wrong. It is our moral duty to have the best genome to take over. The men today can have the best sex ever, free and open, so a small compromise won't hurt them, but will greatly improve humankind. It has nothing to do with self-esteem. It has to do with rationality and doing God's work. The God, which is in us, not the God invented for us. And this true God says we have to have the best genome possible for everybody. The knights bent their knees before God only. The men of today can do the same before the order of the real God. This one is a new age of knights, we have to take over the power from nature. I think that is all I have to say about the topic.

- Well, thank you, darling, in the name of the girls and women of the world. The new age means the girls can have their way finally if I understood it right.

- What the Generalissimo has just said is that for the benefit of humankind as one, we have to have the next generations become more potent, and that is the main order of Nature, or the concept of God in all of us. And yes, the girls have the perfect right to have the most perfect genes possible for their child. And the duty of the men is to support God in the way. Also, it is the duty of the women to give great sex to the men, because they have to understand that the men give up something for the future, and they have to be greatly rewarded for this. We are not enemies. We are allies in this transitional and a little confusing age. Am I right, Sir?

- Perfectly right, General, as always. I think we have enlightened those in doubt. That is all.

(- OK. So you had a great speech, a great night sex with the Queen and her ladies, the time went by, what else is there to tell? The children. They were smart, much smarter than the usual. Good. We come to that later. The research produced results, the freezing and the artificial genome was still a long way to go, but already some light could be seen at the end of the tunnel. Science produced something interesting.

- Yes, and we can jump to the **tenth** Constantine-Day now, because by that time the research with the freezing produced some good news. The animals revived and lived after a long period of being in the frozen state. Then the General ordered to continue the research with humans. We still had lots of Chinese and Africans at that time, and they were volunteers, well, kind of. I received the vaccines or whatever it was, and the last 10 years was completely erased from my appearance. I was younger, I felt younger, and loved my five Thai Ensigns who followed me to the new suite in the sky-scraper, and we were like a family. They were my body-guards, cooks, chauffeurs, lovers, etc. When the Queen was in Byzantium we were together, otherwise she had her own apartment just under mine, even if half the size, but still enormous in proportion. The lower levels were divided into 12 apartments, each of those was huge, and as we went higher, divided into less and less. Under mine were two suites. The tower was round-shaped, the elevator in the middle and on the sides, and I had my own elevator, and for every apartments there was a food-lift from the kitchen, so anybody could order whenever whatever he/she wanted, but all of them had own kitchens as well. I was invited to more parties I could attend, and I had my own flying hotel, so I lived a great life. Moscow, Budapest, New York, Aachen, Vienna, Paris, London, and many more places I went to, but I rather liked to be at home with my books and my Thais and my children. I also discovered

and loved to explore the labyrinth under the Castle and had great pleasure to collect every kind of priceless wine, cognac, whisky and other rare drinks from all over the world. I spent many hours down there. Felix sometimes accompanied me, so did my daughters many times. The collection was down under the Castle. We kept it a secret. Later it becomes important in the story. It was a huge labyrinth-system, remnant of the Romans and the Turks originally, but we enlarged it even further, deeper, and made it a real maze.

I remember it was the **thirteenth** Constantine-Day when the leader of the research-team in charge of the freezing and revival told me the great news that many man was revived from the icing and lived. There was more research necessary, but it is sure it can be done one day soon safely and for longer time. It really was great news. On the next, the **fourteenth** Constantine-Day we were sitting on the same terrace as always, and my daughters came to me. They wanted to become officers. Unbelievable, it sounded so strange.)

- My dearests, you know I love you very much. You are only 13. You supposed to be playing, go around the world, not to bury yourselves in an office. I know you already have a diploma and completed the four years in the Academy in one year. But it won't make you an officer. You need experience in life. So do what gives you pleasure, my dearests, and maybe later we talk about this again. I promise you all, your wish will become true, but have some play now.

- I've fulfilled the requirements of the Academy. I can be a Byzantine Major now. That would be my greatest pleasure.

- If you liked to serve, then learn more. Look into the affairs of the state, look for and solve problems nobody's thinking about as a problem today. We are very apt to get used to the present and take it granted that that's how it's supposed to be forever. The emerging of that kind of thinking is always the beginning of the end of any society. Do some research, my dear. Only you want to be Chief Officer so much? OK, the others can go and study, live the life as you like and later you'll become officers. I tell you what I'm going to do. I give you the rank of Byzantine Major without assignment, so you have the right to obtain every data and document you want, and you will be my personal aide. This way you do whatever you want, research and help me officially. Is that satisfactory, my dear Princess of Byzantium?

- You are the best, dad. Or rather yes, Sir, it is satisfactory. You won't be disappointed.

- Come, give me a kiss, my love. OK, go and have a good time.

- I say, Sir, what she needs is a good party-life. I'll take her to the emperors, everywhere. She is a born leader. But it isn't enough, I would say. She has to be at home in the High Society. She has to learn the way of thinking from a different standpoint too.

- My son, you speak all kinds of languages; your mother, the Queen, takes you everywhere, so you do it. Take her with you. She needs the experience. And what do you want to be?

- I am the Prince of The Hague. The title of a king would be fine later. I am studying history, arts, philosophy; I am very satisfied as I am now. OK, Sir, I'll talk to her, if you'll excuse me.

She went to the parties of the emperors, of the kings and princes, and she did gain experience. Everybody knew she is the personal aide of the Generalissimo, so she was received everywhere like a princess she really was. They became close friends with her half-brother. In the meantime she researched the affairs of the state; dug herself into the sciences, and everybody was waiting for the perfect genome. It was on the **seventeenth** Constantine-Day when the

artificial genome was finally ready for use, and the first volunteers were implanted with it. The head of the children yet unborn was designed to be larger with a larger brain, so they will be born by caesarean operation, or C-section. That was so great news that the whole world was in turmoil, because everybody followed the researches, and the scientists were then the heroes. The pregnancy of the volunteers was sure, so the world was waiting for the artificial children. Before this only the paternal genes were artificial or rather perfected, but from now on the maternal genes were artificial as well. When they were finally born, they were perfect babies. They lived, and they were same as any beautiful perfect child. The daughters of the Generalissimo became scientists, artists, and many of them were members of the Officers' Corps. It would be useless and too long to give a detailed account of it here. The first daughter of his with the help of others recreated the monetary system of the world, united the currencies of the four empires, organized the economy to perfection, and it really was a great deal. For this and other services for the State she was promoted to the rank of Byzantine Colonel. Many of her sisters were promoted to Major, Captain, Lieutenant, and slowly, surely they have taken over the direction of the major logistic centres of the world year after year.

- I am getting a little tired. These kids of ours are too smart for me.

- Their IQ is around 230, some less, some more. I don't even know what they are talking about sometimes. I am so happy for it. Also I am very happy that the Colonel is not a typical egghead. She goes to parties with her half-brother, and she is at home everywhere. I mean every science and the High Society. Her IQ is 240. Well, you are 36 now; it was 18 years ago when your first Constantine-Day was so happy. Don't give up yet, General. We are still the masters of the world. We still have things to do; we have to make sure the future is in good hands, and the freezing is not completed yet, nor the artificial genome is solved completely to make babies outside of the human body. The kids are not ready for the high politics either. To think it over again, there is no high politics anymore. So teach in the Academy, at least the philosophy. Nobody is better than you in that subject.

- All right, Sir. It is really true that the glory of one generation is about 15 years. I was on the top of the world for 15 years. Now it is my daughters' time. My only regret is that I haven't constructed anything; I have achieved many things, but I never invented anything new, like you did. Well, I will think, I still have many years to come up with something original. The transition goes smoothly. The semi-artificial mankind will have their time in about 20 years. Until then it is my daughters' time. I hope they will create something great. History is over; it is finished with the oneness and the artificial genome for sure. What we still need is the religion which is in accord with the minimized entropy. We need the perfect religion. It will be unbelievably simple. Exactly that is the reason why we don't see it now. It is right before our eyes. It is everywhere, in the shopping window, in the air, so we do not see it.

- The problem comes in with the perfection of the artificial genome if and when the longevity of the human life might be prolonged too far. The real problem surely will arise if and when they solve the possibility of the unlimited lifetime. Living forever contradicts the essence of life itself. Who's going to give up her life voluntarily, if there is no pressure to do so? So the multiplication starts again, and who knows what is going to happen? No, General, the problems are not solved yet, and if there will be a pressure from the State to give up one's life, then it will become a dictatorship and unlimited inequality, because the ones in power won't

ever give up their life, and a military caste will emerge with the power over the life and death of the citizenry. It creates slavery. Do you see the problem, General? Of course you do.

- I was thinking along the same line, and it makes me a little uncomfortable. If we would cause that dictatorship by the discovery of the artificial genome, well, I felt to be responsible for that. We still have time to think about it. Maybe it would be beneficial if you talked to the Colonel about it. I don't think I can handle it myself alone. It is a self-contradiction, arisen anew. It has to be solved from the outside, like we have solved the original self-contradiction of society. The people have to be induced to give up their life voluntarily, or the genome has to be made with built-in limited lifetime, but both cases can be dodged later. Now, these are insoluble problems living in the system, should it ever occur. We are still very far from it. But as we arrive closer to the solution of the completely artificial mankind, it surely will come to the fore. By then we supposed to have the solution to elude that dismal end.

- Oh, yes, it has to be solved from the outside. But where is that outside? Yes, we cannot even identify the outside, or the solution, or the problem. But keep your head up, lecture in the Academy, think about it, and it will come to you.

It was on the **23<sup>rd</sup>** Constantine-Day when the General became 40 years old. Helene was 38, and still beautiful. The High Council was in session, but there was nothing really to solve.

- Well, we are getting old. How come you look like the same as 20 years ago? General, let's decide on something. Why don't you take the title of Marshal, so the Colonel can be General together with the other kids you have? Sir, in the same time, I would like to resign, because there is nothing to do with the army, telling you the truth, there is no army anywhere anymore, except couple of regiments stationed all over the world, screwing the NPF mostly. So here I am, Commander of a non-existent army. It is a joke. I have a nice little place; I might keep the title of Honorary Marshal if you let me, retire, hunt, and party.

- So would I, Sir. The logistics are in place, and I don't even understand this new hardware anymore. Thank you for the many fruitful years I had the honour helping you. It was great.

- OK, if you say so. The General is promoted to Marshal. Against? Nobody. So ordained. The two Marshals resigned, retired, they keep their rank as Honorary Marshal. So ordered. The Colonel is promoted to the rank of Byzantine General. Against? Nobody. So ordained.

- We also could make her a full member of the Council. Better now.

- Against? Nobody. So ordained. OK, the Council is adjourned. How are you, my friend? You don't look tired or old either.

- The Vatican keeps me going. Besides, I get the same vaccines just like you do. I still have things to attend to. I am happy for you daughter. We talk quite a lot. She is very smart.

- That is why you suggested her membership here. Good. She can learn a lot from you. We have a little problem, but it cannot be solved now, only in the future, should it come to fore. Nothing is sure, there is no enemy to point out or identify. We are fighting against a shadow which might not even show up. Well, can you beat that, Felix? I am certain she informed you about the essence of the problem.

- Yes. I am sure you are aware of the fact that I am the Chief of the State Security. I developed to or born with a different kind of thinking than the average Joe has. You never even heard about me during these many years, and that is the reason to have State Security, so whatever we do is unseen, unheard. We solve problems before those even become visible to

the common people. We will have some solution. Maybe not the final solution, maybe a little unorthodox, but we will think out something within our power. OK, I have things to do.

The Colonel was very happy to be promoted to General, and member of the Council.

- I think at least 5 of my sisters are ready for the rank of General, Sir. They are already Colonels and leaders of the Officers' Corps at the empires. One of my sisters is able to lead the logistics here. There are many who are capable to become Colonels. I move to promote them.

- OK. I will have to talk to the emperors. Formality, but formalities are important. I will go to their party and it will be done. You can come with me. How is the Prince of The Hague, by the way? He is a great gift for me. I love his aristocratic elegance for sure.

- Well, Sir, we are kind of a pair. We love each other, but I love girls as well, so it isn't unnatural. The Marshal decided to move to the sky-scraper, so I will have the Castle. Actually she is already there. Just under your level.

- I am very happy for you. And here is my son. How are you, Prince?

- Quite right, Sir. I hope you don't mind this unusual arrangement with the General? The Thais have been taken care of. We have our new staff. Rather young, I would say, Sir. Come, I introduce them to you. We like to keep the conventional arrangements, so 20 of them, just like yours. Beautiful creatures, I would say. The beauty is only one thing. They are also very smart, so they can help with every kind of things. Well, we'll have a lot to do, like the renovation of the Castle, parties, and she needs partial problems to be solved smoothly and efficiently. Well, Sir, just call us if we can go to the emperors.

In 3 months the General was appointed three-star General, her adjutant sister two-star General, and the leaders of the Empires' Officers' Corps became one-star Generals. The Marshall still lectured, still needed his signature on major decisions, but he was involved in the problem which may never come.

- There is only one way to be sure. I'll go with you. I would be worried to death otherwise.

- OK. I hope it will be soon. How are the artificial kids? Let's go visit them.

They were beautiful, smart, big-headed, which made them even more loveable. They talked to the doctors, did what dignitaries supposed to do, congratulated the staff, but there was nothing else to do. The plan was to have three or four different body-type of girls and one or two type of boys. The men supposed to be needed, although they considered it was for the sake of continuance of the cultural state of affairs. The Marshal lectured in the Academy for the pleasure of it.

- I am very pleased to see this big auditorium is filled up, and the TV is here too. It gives me great pleasure to be loved. I am not so pleased with the state of the mind of the humankind of today, but we have reason to believe that it will improve with the artificial genome. I take you through step by step from the beginning up to date and beyond, so you will know what my concerns are. The mind of man some hundreds of thousand years ago were developed by an accident of the sexual selection. The big brain has been selected for some good or bad reason, and those who carried the genes of the development of ever larger brain have taken over the world. You can read about it in many books, so I will skip it. The standing up on two legs and

the big head meant the child had to be born after 9 month pregnancy prematurely, instead of 21 month for the baby to be developed like the monkeys'. It means that the so-called natural 9 month pregnancy in reality is not normal, but premature, because the override of the sexual selection, so nature isn't perfect in its doings, whatever else anyone thinks defending nature. It also means that both parents needed for the upbringing of the child. And that is where our journey begins. The brain has become larger, but it was created not for rational and causal thinking, that is a side-effect only, but for influencing the other sex to do what the other sex was hesitated to do before, or hesitated to do with that person, namely to have sex with him or her. The two major order of nature is the *multiply the genes* and *stay alive in order to be able to multiply the genes*. The men had to beguile the females to accept their genes, and the females had to search for the best genes available for them individually. For this choosing they had to become desirable, so they had more men-possibilities to choose from. It is a game of "who entices whom", and you are familiar with it, and the literature is full of it. The *stay alive* order needed a much different type of brain-working than the *multiply* order. Staying long alive we need to know the laws of nature and we have to induce the forces of nature to do what we set out to do. This is the trick of the rational mind. For this we need to follow the logic of nature, the logic of science, and for this we have to learn a lot and it is hard work, because the brain was not created for this. The brain was created for what we call now social life. Inducing other people to do what we want them to do is the main objective, being the multiplication of the genes, the sex the real currency of the society. Everything else comes after and inferior to this. We do not need to learn this kind of science, it is naturally in everybody. The two major brain-workings are the *causal creative* and the *teleological conqueror*. We create by using the resources of nature and we conquer the minds of others. For the first we need the causal thinking, for the latter we need the teleological thinking. It is also clear for everybody. The two permitted workings of the brain mixed, and the results are the *causal conqueror* and the *teleological creative*. These are not permitted by nature. Only humans have it by chance, by the mistake of nature, by the result of too big brain and too small brain in one and the same time. It is too big to produce the mixture of the permitted types, creating the non-permitted ones all right and too small to be able to distinguish the wrong types of workings when it comes to solve problems. The mixing's results are the religion, the arts, mathematics of the infinite, the philosophy of the Absolute, and so on. It is very hard and useless to try to separate what goes under which category. The thinking of mankind had been hopelessly mixed and the evidence is clear if you read literature, philosophy and basically every social science dated before the revolution of ours. One man alone discovered the folly, and it was no small task to recognize and identify the different workings of the brain at the time we didn't even know the brain well enough. It gives us the key and the base to build the new philosophy up on this revolutionary recognition.

His other work was the integration of the thermodynamics into the social sciences, constructing a real science of the society. The first and only truth we are absolutely can be sure about is the Second Law of Thermodynamics. Entropy increases. This is the pivot, the decision point of every theory of science. If a hypothesis contradicts the Second Law, then we can throw that hypothesis to the trashcan. The non-contradiction won't make the hypothesis true by itself, but that is a different story. Here we have a little problem. We have no idea what energy and entropy really is. But that is not an obstacle, because these are final concepts

which cannot be analysed further, so the thing we call *knowing a concept* means also analysing the concept, but you cannot analyse the final concept by and from which every other concept is analysed. There is an end in the thinking, and only the mixed forms of brain workings cannot accept this truth. Those, the mixed thinking create the Absolute and other fallacies, not apprehending that they are going in rounds and rounds without result. From this emerged the many different philosophies and tons of useless theories invented and recreated again without result. Three different thermodynamic systems can be detected in society, such as the economy, the civilisation and the culture. Economy is the field of the causal creative mind. With the new kind of thinking economy can be controlled easily. The old monetary system was a fraud. The genius I am talking about identified the essence of money just like the great Clausius identified the entropy. The essence and purpose of the money is that it measures a new quantity called the Virtual Wealth. The quantitative and the commodity theories of money and everything in between are false, are not in accordance with the Second Law, and their fallacy were clear by the periodically recurring crises and depressions without any foreseeable reason by those theories whatsoever. Economy was really a dismal science, as Ricardo called it. The genius has created the scientific monetary system and created money with permanent purchasing power, and we have this scientific money, and it still is permanent in purchasing power and remains so for centuries to come. The key is the timing of the issue or the withdrawal of the quantity of money in circulation, and to put an end to the creation of non-existent credit money by the banks. It is easy to understand and self-evident now, but at the time of his work he was all alone with his theory and enormous vested interest tried to prevent even the publication of his findings, and for the implementation of it he had to start a revolution. With the scientific money, the capital redemption, the common ownership of the land and the reorganization of the whole economy we made the money to be the servant of life, not the master of life, so that is why we have this smoothly running economic system of plenty today and economy finally became a science so we live in the age of abundance.

The civilisation is a different system. It is the playing-field of the great teleological conqueror mind. Here the result of the inducement of others, to do what we want them to do, mostly sex, makes us happy. Teleological, because we do not follow the laws of nature, it has nothing to do with the trick of the rational mind, instead we have our result before we set out to do it, and we change strategy and tactics many times over to achieve our goal according to the opponent's feeling, and not by the laws of nature. Here we arrive to the strategy of the male and the strategy of the female as programmed by nature. You're all familiar with it by the ontological base of aesthetics and the righteousness. The point is that the strategies, the causal and teleological require ever more beautiful and ever smarter men and women. The liberal philosophies were the real enemies of mankind, and the trashy production of the mind used the non-permitted forms to solve the problems of the causal creative. What we needed were not more and more ugly idiots, and we had to acknowledge that the singular life has no value just for itself. By some plague and sickness nature had her revenge, and 5 – 6 billion people died all over the world. Some would feel sorry for them. I say, to multiplying them was very cruel. Who is responsible for letting the manure filling up the stable, taking over the living place and possibilities from the noble steeds? The manure has been cleared away, and the noble ones had their place on Earth. The culture is the third system. Here we have the duty first, and the reward comes later accordingly. We are oneness and individuals at one and the same

time, indivisible. Spinoza had distinguished and united the individual things and the modus. Every individual thing is modus, being the reflection of the attributes of the Substance. Read about it, because here he had the major point of the principle of culture. It is also very difficult to understand, because we are thinking in individualism and collectivism, but the real quality what matters here is something new, not the simple quantity mixture of the above. Maybe one day we will understand this concept as it really is. For that comprehension we need the larger brain, and when and if we understand it, we are ready for the new religion according to reality. I just project that this concept will be something like the negentropy or the virtual wealth in the sense of freely giving up something personal for the good of the whole. It also will resemble DeBroglie's famous wave in the physics, connecting every particle in the Universe. In the civilisation we have the right first, the right to choose and the duty to enoble mankind by our choice. It is the field of the individual, and through it we arrive at the oneness, the modus. In the cultural system we, as individuals, have the duty for the whole of mankind or we can call it Substance. It is the field of oneness. We, each individual, are responsible for the whole first and through that we are responsible for our own decisions. We have to achieve the highest potential of the humanity, and that is our first duty here on Earth. That is exactly what we are doing by the artificial genome. The nature is blind and has no direction. We have direction and purpose. We have to enlarge the brain in order to enable it to differentiate among the different types of working of the brain, originally created for conquest, and the rational had come with it as an accident. We hope that the larger brain of the new generations will be able to distinguish and will work better or more adequately through the laws of nature. We do not know how much bigger the size of the brain should become in order to work properly, but we surely can say that through this enlargement the more adequate thinking will produce a happier mankind. Our brain is not sufficient, and we have no time to wait for the blind, cruel and brainless nature to do our cultural duty. Science will have the answer. With this we might get into a self-contradiction if the unlimited life-time ever becomes a possibility. That has to be solved, and by that new concept I mentioned it will be solved. Now it is my unconditional pleasure to give the baton-stick of leadership of the Officers' Corps to the new generation, to take over this unbelievably hard and unbelievably fruitful work. Ladies and gentlemen, I introduce to you the Byzantine three-star General of the High Council, from now officially the leader of the Officers' Corps.

- Thank you, Marshal. The Generalissimo and you have paved the road extremely well. I promise you all that we'll go all the way to Paradise on it.

(- OK. The Marshal gave the leadership to the General publicly. The freezing process was totally worked out and declared absolutely fail-proof and safe by the doctors. Then **the 25<sup>th</sup> Constantine-Day** has arrived.

- Yes. The empires had no more use, because the whole world was one, without borders. Besides the emperors were tired and old, they wanted to retire. The High Council first received the Generals for new members, and then the old members resigned. I didn't resign, nor did Felix. After the change of personnel in the Council we had a session with the new Council.)

- We are ready for the travel. Let's make the indivisibility clause. I don't want any problems with the leaders of the future. It may be in vain, but it is some kind of insurance.

- Of course. You do not resign but confer or depute the power of the President of the High Council the way that nobody can make you resign that power, not even you. It is the indivisibility clause which is completely corroborated by logic. It is like the indivisibility of the land. There was no time and occasion in the history when the original common land could have been divided among some owners. It was the wrongdoing of the legal system which did that. Nobody ever had the right to give up his and the future generations' right to the land or in this case we'll make the clause so that every leader of the High Council takes her office on the condition that if you ask for the Presidency, the Council have to give it to you, and you have no right and possibility to resign this right of yours, because it is not within your power to do so. Don't worry; we are masters of it, Dad. We do not know what you are going to find in the future, but as long as we are in power, we try to influence the future the best way we can. Felix is still working with us. I am sure we can figure out something great.

- Thanks, kids. I love you all.



It took about two weeks for putting everything in order, and the freezing started. The Marshal and Helene also decided to go with him. They were frozen with the order that for the 125<sup>th</sup> Constantine-Day they should be revived. After the process was done, the three-star General convened every one of his children to Byzantium. They were many. He was used gratuitously as donor for ladies of the High Society. It was decided that the logistics will be reorganized, and the imperium and country dissolved slowly in the process. Instead there will be smaller or larger economical units created rationally, which could be much better governed than the historical countries created by frozen history, actual-politically. The unfreezing of history we advanced also, but they had much more leeway to do that. Civilian government of the local level was very important, and the duty of the new aristocracy will be just that. For the members of the aristocracy the relatives and the kids of the emperors were perfect, being all of them

already in high positions, being smarter than the average. The logistics were mostly in the hands of the children he had with the Marshal, and became officers. The relatives and others as well were closely watched and selected during the week-long convention, their number being about a thousand. At the end and in the following months they were given the titles of king, prince, earl, count and baron and were assigned all around the world for castles and palaces, with the task of the aristocrat, meaning the civilian leaders of the territory, judges, and the keepers of the civilisation, arts and such things. Locality, instead of nationality, economic development of the whole world instead of competition of regions, the advancement of the sciences, the happiness of the people were the major driving forces in the next century.

(- But you do know all that from the books and documents, because you were on the ice then. So what they have done is their story. She was the three-star General? She had her mother's green eyes. Not bad at all. We're going to find out later what they had done, now let's stick to

your story. And your story continues when you three were revived. It was before the 125<sup>th</sup> Constantine-day.

- Exactly. I was alive and well, my memory intact. The first thing I saw was the doctor. And I was amused. She was so different from the humans I knew, but in the same time very much looked the same. I explain. Her head was bigger, the high forehead made her beautiful. I looked in the mirror, and couldn't believe it was I looking back. I was younger.)

- Welcome, Generalissimo. We have done what we could, so now you look like you were way before. I hope you won't protest. Here is your uniform, just like the old one. The diamonds and goodies are the originals of course.

- Thank you, dear. Tell me something. The humans of today have the artificial genome?

- Of course, Sir, everybody has, but we still have to use the human uterus for development of the babies. We have men and women, the women outnumbering the men four times. We find this perfect. We have four different kinds of female bodies and one kind of male, and the working of their brain is about the same, but the researchers are working on it more. The brain-size is about 1500 – 1550 cm<sup>3</sup>, in development all the time; yours is 1350. The extra capacity goes to the rational and the emotional. Meaning we are smarter and more loving. But please put your clothes on, I have to deliver you to the Council. The ladies are taken care of, they are healthy and ready... OK. We can go now.

- Marshal, Helene, you look like 20 years olds. Good to see you, my dears.

- We did what we could, Generalissimo. A little plastic surgery can make wonders. You all have received a serum, so you are healthy. And here we are...

The Council had 8 members, all Marshals, 6 women and 2 men. Very impressive they were in their uniforms, very glad to receive the historical personage, and they were asked if they want to go to the festivities. Of course they wanted to go. On the way from the Castle they could see the new city, which wasn't too different from the old they all knew, but the people they were much more interested in. Most of them were naked, and the compassionate love were displayed everywhere.



- It is unbelievable. The girls are so beautiful, maybe the big forehead makes them so, and so shamelessly displaying their love for each other. We had a very open society, but this would have been unacceptable then. It is not bad at all, just makes me curious.

- The bigger brain means a lot more sex and emotion. They also have more rationality.

The men are happy with it. We are happy with it. The economy is in very good shape, although we don't care about material thing too much. We are the society of love and science.

- Just like the sixties. And I mean the nineteen sixties. If you can't be with the one you love, you love the one you're with. Good old times. How many humans are altogether?

- Around 2 billion. We cannot and will not go any higher. We have insufficient resources for more if we want to keep the high standard of living, besides we know it is completely unnec-

essary and insane. We have read your books, Sir. But we are here. Please, enjoy the Day. The people know you are coming, so don't be surprised if they welcome you all warmly.

Warm welcome it really was. The girls have been taken by different groups, and given a warm welcome, meaning sex. He looked around the Square, went to shops, and found the merchandise little poor in quantity and selection. In his time there was maybe more and wider variety of goods in these shops. They just don't really need the many kinds of clothes and jewellery, and they are perfectly right. With a body like this, who needs clothes? He went to the jewellery store, looked around, and noticed the shortage of precious stones, gold and platinum, silver. When he asked the jeweller about that, he received the answer that there are not much in circulation, because the industry needed the metals for the automation. It was very strange, because that just cannot be, or the development of the industry was really something. He knew how much gold and platinum the world had, and knew how many precious stones Byzantium had. Something was strange. Instead of the gems, they made the jewellery out of everyday materials, they were nice, and anyway, who needed that with the body like this? It was a fair answer. They really didn't care about jewellery and luxury items much. It was like going back to Sparta. Not bad. After a couple of hours they met again in a terrace of a restaurant, ordered the Dish of the Generalissimo, and they had that.

- My God, was this a sex or what? I mean the technic is perfect, but mostly that warm, real love we've received, that unconditional joy of giving and receiving pleasure, this is a magic society, Sir. I wasn't among the ugliest back then, but these girls are more gorgeous.

- Wasn't bad at all, Helene, that is for sure. You are still beautiful, for me you always will be. Now, the lifetime is about 100 years with about 70 years of looking young, but can be longer. They didn't solve the life forever problem, and that is OK. I have a strange feeling about something I can't identify. I think we are in a new age of the early knights, or Sparta. I couldn't ask many questions, because we had to catch up with a century of no sex, so we had enough now. At least a couple of hours I won't need more. But just looking at those perfect beauties, I might revise the latter statement. The food is good. But somehow it doesn't have the rich taste we had. The wine is fine, but average. Yes, I think they are happy with themselves, and who cares about wine? Well, we have our apartments in the sky-scraper back, so we have plenty of time to figure out this beautiful society. The old testosterone-induced violence is gone, love and cooperation is the main trend here.

They talked to the members of the Council; they travelled around the world, they saw the factories, the fields of grain, the hordes of beef, food was no problem. The technical advancement was great, although not as great as wildly expected from the shortage of precious metals. The four body-types were all sexy, and the men were happy with this. The people were smart, so schooling wasn't a problem. The logistics made a marvellous job. Later they met with the people who had different views on many things, and they found out that there was an opposition of the system as it was then. The main concern was over the different body-types and the males. They had their point. Society as it was then could be developed into more diversification or to oneness. The regnant leadership tried to keep it as it was, in equilibrium, but the possibility was there to move to either direction. Every side could defend their programme ably. The production of the babies in totally artificial manner was not solved

yet, but the solution was just a step ahead, they said. So the babies still had to be borne by the mothers, although the genome was entirely artificial and the researchers always made it better by enlarging the brain and making the bodies even sexier. This has had its own problems philosophically. He spoke with the opposition which wanted the oneness in place, and she really was a wonderfully brained woman. A real philosopher she was. She was very logical, smart and beautiful. It was a pleasure to talk with her.

- I have to tell you the truth. This age is a new transition-age. I lived and fought my whole life in transitional ages, and we continuously changed society for some better one and all the time society became better. Had we consolidated the one we were living in at any given time, I am sure we would have slid back to worse. We produced negentropy, and kept producing it. You're smarter than I am. I have no idea what would be the best now. But I know for sure that oneness is a perfectly defendable position. It is philosophically perfect. The only problem is the way the babies are borne. If you solve that, your position is flawless.

- Yes, we are aware of the problem. We will solve that. What we will need then is a religion in accordance with science to avoid calamity.

- But my dear, I will stay, and Helene will stay, because we are not going anywhere from this Paradise of yours. We will do it. Don't worry, dear, we have time. We have to see which direction this society will move on its own, we detect the wish of the people, and I have solved many problems on my own. With you it will be a piece of cake. It might take couple of years, but we have time. We'll create something genuinely great.

- Oh, yes, Marshal, we thank you for reorganizing the economy back then after the American Empire has been created. You made the factories to make the most perfect everyday items for very inexpensive, like cars and clothes and many more. And the standard of living went up immediately, the working hours lowered, and everybody was happy. We have advanced that system even further. Now the factories are new, so it is easier.

- I remember, dear. I told the biggest factories not to change the designs every year, because the cars won't be better, only more expensive. After the world-population has been lowered so much, their capacity wasn't fully used, and we had many factories, numbered for the 8 billion, so many of them had to be closed or reorganized for the lessened population. I eliminated the built-in amortization also, because that was a scam anyway to get the people to buy more, completely unnecessarily. I wanted quality and mass-production in one. There is such a thing as perfection or rather sufficiency. So they made three kinds of cars, two kinds of family-cars, three kinds of 4WD, three kinds of trucks and two kinds of camions. These were much cheaper than before. The production of one car, say cost about 1600 dollars, and was sold for around 10 or 15 thousand before. Why? Because of the money spent on the research and unneeded development, limited production, yearly new design, commercials and the taxation of the bureaucracy. So my logistics took over. The engineers were freed from the bureaucracy, and the cars cost about 3 or 4 thousand instead of ten thousand, and the shareholders profited as much as before. We just had to reduce the misunderstood competition. The irresponsible kind of competition is always bad and it is true that capitalism is the best system ever created, but that system never been put to work in its finest before. We perfected it. We made the cheap things of life in the big factories and the luxury items were made by the small companies and artists. Just as you have it now. Everything is inexpensive, and with

the fully automated factories the working hours are short, and everybody can have a job and a good standard of life without big government and bureaucracy.

- Yes, my dear Marshal. This way we have resources and human time for scientific research.

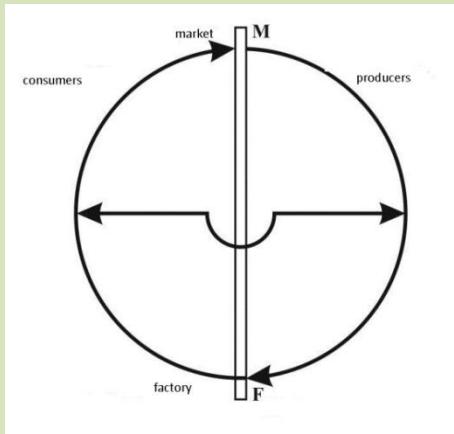
- OK, ladies, I am going to look around the Castle. Have to think. Something is strange. I am happy that you want to stay. I have to go. I cannot die in a transitional society. The mythology would never be created. And that is all I care about. That was the reason to start the revolution in the first place. So I want to see the end. I talked to the doctors. They cannot guarantee more than 375 years in ice. So I will wake up at the 500<sup>th</sup> Constantine-Day. I think it is far enough. So I stay about two more months, and off I go.

- Sir, I would like to ask you for at least one lecture in the University. It will be remembered by all. Before you set off to go, please do it for us.

- All right. Organize it anytime.

He went for a walk around the Castle. What the hell is this shortage of the precious metals? The museums have almost no paintings. All they have are second-rate. The people are precious. They really are. So beautiful, so giving, so good-hearted, it just would be a shame to destroy this society. Maybe the beauty and goodness can be saved. Here he is, walking around the Castle he knows so well inside and out, and nobody is asking questions. In his time he would have been shot and killed without warning. There is no crime, no stealing, not a bad word between individuals, not even in the heated arguments. He went to the door in the wall. Constantine was still there, looking at the door. He sat down. Now, how to keep that door locked? He was there all afternoon, the whole evening, thinking. He went to his suite and found two beauties there. They just came to give him pleasure. How did you get in? Nobody asked, and they decided to come, and here they are. Unbelievable. They stayed all night. In the next two months he studied the statistics, he calculated, and then he thought he knew what was going on. He considered it and talked to the Marshal.

- Whatever you do, do not interfere with the economy things here. I cannot tell you everything; maybe you know already what the problem is here, this shortage of things could be artificial. Do not interfere. Science is not affected by it, so just let it be. What you'll do, you create a religion. Now or soon it can be done. You are smart enough to do that. The real religion can be constructed, and now you are from the outside, so you will do it. I have to go. Try to prolong this society. This is too precious. But the positive values can be saved for the coming age. It is up to you how you going to create the perfect theory. Our daughter already has a statue in the Square, so has Felix. When I wake up, I want to see yours there, too. I do not want to use grandiose words, but this is your real big time here to create your own. You had your big time once. With this work here, you become a goddess. I left some papers in my room. Maybe you can use those. I envy you. If I had to choose an age to live in, I would choose this one. Sparta. A modern-age Sparta it is. But I have to see the outcome, the final solution. I just have to go, whatever I find there I have to know and influence if bad. One lecture is due tomorrow. I think they already know everything I possibly could say fortunately.



- It is very difficult for me to come up with any topic here, so I just bore you with the investment into the industry, because that is a fascinating story and because you have to do it, no matter what kind of shape your industry is in. The money is going from hand to hand, taking out consumer goods and services in every turn; so money does not perish today in this scientific age, like it did in the age of the credit-system. Whoever sells goods and services does it for profit, so he can live on something. More and more money is necessary for the efficient economy to function right. What happens with the

extra money? Now, if in every turn money takes out something from the market on the real value, how on Earth can the agents of production renewed? It can't. The agents of production amortize, and the continuous remaking of those is essential. The investment cannot go into the system through the market; it must go inside the production system in a by-way, short-circuiting the market. That is the money which some time ago was handled like the monetary loan, completely confusing the two different kind of loans. I show you in a graphic what happens here exactly. The circuit represents the roundabout way of the money, and the straight line between F and M is the way of the consumer goods. Short-circuit is in the middle, money is going from the consumers to the producers without going through the market, so it won't take anything out of the goods. Somebody have to give up her purchasing power, so investment is made in the future. That money going through twice on the market, meaning the goods produced must be priced higher. In the past this was achieved by obtaining credit, which is newly created money, so it was not a genuine saving for the future, rather inflation caused deliberately, so everybody's purchasing power was lowered, and this trick caused the saving of some kind nobody wanted, but nonetheless the result is the same, because the laws of the system cannot be circumvented. Back to our business here, the genuine giving up of the money doesn't create inflation, because it is saved money, given up money, really existing money, and not newly created credit-money. This investment cannot be repaid. There is no such yardstick which would tell us exactly the relation between the invested man-hours of the newly created capital and the work-saving by this capital compared with the old one. The old amortizes anyway, so must be created anew. There is no mathematical equation we can turn to for help. Of course it doesn't give us the right to confuse the investment with the monetary loan. The money loaned bears interest, which is the payment for non-repayment until the loan is repaid. The investment can never be repaid, so a dividend, a reward is paid, but it cannot be paid infinitely, because it adds up to enormous sum year after year, and it is a perpetuum mobile of the second type, when one energy-investment keeps the system going on infinitely. It causes society to go broke, and it did cause societies in my time to go broke, but the economist couldn't figure out why. You already know the taxation of the dividend and the state buying the stocks from the money thus received. This way about double the money invested will go back to the investor, which is the result of a moral standard, not a mathematical equation. The investor must be rewarded, but this reward must follow the law of amortization. Taxation can be reduced to minimum if the community slowly takes over the industry, and the dividend received enriches the whole population instead of enriching some

leisured class living on the work of others. The investor gives only one thing to the economy; she loans the agents of production to produce with it. The worker gives her effort to make it happen. The purchasing power of money depends on the level where the worker and the investor finally agree on the distribution of wealth. But of course you all completely familiar with it, but in my age the economists couldn't even understand any of it. Investment is like activation energy. They didn't know science, so this concept was far from their brain-capacity to understand. Love you all, keep up the good work you doing, have debates and solve your problems rationally.

(- OK. So you stayed awhile, figured things out, had a speech, and left the Marshal with a task to do. Good. Then you were frozen again, and you have no idea about those 375 years, so the next time you woke up, it was just before the **500<sup>th</sup>** Constantine-Day. You woke up, you came to your senses, and you found that your memory is intact, everything is fine, and what you saw was the miracle itself embodied in female flesh and blood.

- Well, I really thought I was in Paradise. There were three absolutely gorgeous beauties around me. They had their cloak on, being doctors, but their head and what I could see of them was an absolute beauty. I have never seen anything like that, because of the different measures of their body-portions just made them look very different I was accustomed to. Their head enormous, great forehead, it was just wonderful. You know, originally the head was evolved by the sexual evolution proportionately bigger, so the girls would resemble more like children, and with that they looked younger, so whoever had the bigger head was chosen more often by the men, and in this cavalcade the brain grew accordingly, developing the rational as side-effect. This started the scientific thinking, and this side-effect has overtaken nature finally. Nature doesn't think; we do. Not everybody does it right, some of us do.



- Can I just make a shot of myself and insert in here? You know, we talk about girls, for the girls, so my exhibitionism just yearns for being in the mythology personally just as I am, beautiful, sexy, desirable and modest. Thanks.)

- Dear Generalissimo, welcome in the year 500. I have good news, and I have a bad news. Which one you want to hear first? OK. The god one is that you are fit and healthy. The bad one is that you're here to stay. There is no way you could be frozen ever again. We

have changed your heart for a good one, and we did what we could to make you looking young again. You are in good health, so don't worry. We also implanted a chip into your wrist, just like everyone has. Later you will know the reason for that. There is a mirror. You like what you see? We've done a plastic surgery, nothing much, but take 10 years off.

- Unbelievable. Where are my clothes? Thank you. Would you enlighten me about the volume of the brain? What is the average size, that is?

- 1750-1800 cm<sup>3</sup>. It is about 450 more than yours. We have all that plus for the rational and a little for the emotional. Well, telling the truth, we enjoy sex a lot; bad news for you, not with males. They are extinct. If you are ready, we should be going. The Council, the Marshals are

waiting for you. Perfect. The tailors have done a good job. It is the perfect copy of your old uniform. The diamonds and sapphires are the originals. So here you are, the living history. Well, I am happy to see you. Come, Generalissimo. And do not try to outsmart the Marshals. I mean it is your best strategy if you acknowledge that they are the smartest of the smartest society ever. At least they like to think that. And here we are. This building is the Council. The Castle is museum; I would say a ruin, a wreck. But you will know everything. You have about 50 years to live; I mean I can guarantee that much at least. Does it make you happy?

- Very much so, doctor. Thank you.

- Marshal, the Generalissimo is healthy, my duty is done. I hereby transfer him to you.

- Thank you, doctor. Well, how are you, Generalissimo? We have revived you, but only by a close vote. To tell you the truth, I do not know why I have voted for the revival, but you are welcome. You have to understand something. You are the one and only male on Earth. About two hundred years ago the last one died, and we do not make males ever since. You have a lot to learn, and I am not sure if it was a good idea, but here you are. Do you have any question? OK. Later you might ask them. Now I would like you to be present at the Square. We will show you to the people, so they won't be scared to death if they see you on the street alone. Try to avoid that anyhow. Also, we have found a piece of ancient paper which says that you are the perpetual heir to the Presidency of the Council. A piece of paper is nothing for us. I hope you understand. You can keep your rank, because it doesn't mean anything anymore to anyone, but looks good in the history-books, so let it be. You will resign from the presidency to make everything legal, because it is just not for you anymore. In exchange you can have the Castle to live in. You can make a living as a tour-guide or something. It is a museum now. Later we'll decide what happens with it. Some say we should demolish it, some say it has historical value. Telling the truth, it would cost a lot to demolish.

- I resign with one condition. If and when the Council ask me to become de facto President of the Council, I automatically will be President. Until then I keep the Honorary President title.

- All right. Against? Nobody. You are the Honorary President without the right to be present or have a voice here, and OK, I won't be laughing, so if the Council will ask you, you'll become de facto President. The Castle is yours; the state will give you a small budget for the maintenance of it, until we decide on its fate. Lieutenant, now you'll take the Generalissimo to home to the Castle, and present him tomorrow at the festivity at noon. You are dismissed.

- OK, Sir, here we are, locked into that miserable ruin they call museum. At least they gave you back your personal belongings, all of the diamonds and other gems you had. That is worth a fortune. We have this car, and the miserable pay, and I am assigned to you as a garde-dame, a punishment without the possibility to advance in rank. I am a foul-up.

- Explain.

- The scientists like to play with the genome. That is the way to perfect it, but sometimes accidents happen. So I am a result of their wrongdoing or research. I like men. I mean there are no men in the world, and of course I like girls too, so I am normal in that sense, but I like men in my fantasy. This is a side-effect of trying to make me more rational than others. The rational side is done, I am one of the few very smart people, but it came with the strange real bisexuality. It is strange, so I am like a stranger in this society and should be kept separated. I am happy you are here nonetheless. I am 25. You find me desirable for sex?

- Unbelievably desirable. We are here. It is not as bad as you made me believe it would be. Actually it is in quite a good shape. Let's look around inside. Come, my dear. I know the place. They have renovated it recently. Painted, draped, and cleaned up the living place. Not in the shape it's supposed to be, but will do for a while. The sky-scraper is gone I am afraid, no wonder. Here is my old quarter. And some clothes, and the diamonds and other belongings are here too. And the Turkish bath is in working order. Well, 375 years without sex I had to suffer on ice, so if you want to join me, my dear, you are free to do so.

(- So you had sex in the bath, it is very interesting, but let's get out of there. So the place wasn't in a too bad condition after all, and you relaxed that evening and night, you talked to her about the present state of affairs, and found out that there is only one kind of people on Earth, and some very small number of other kinds, called goddesses. You found out that everybody has a chip in her wrist, where they store the personal information and the money. There is no paper money, only this debit-money, but it is real and it belongs to the person and she is free to do whatever she pleases with her money. It was an inalienable right.

- Yes, it was new and logical. There was no income tax, and the money is nobody's business only the owners' of the money. It was like a holy right. It was good news. Next day we went to the Square. It was reassuring to see the Marshal's statue on the Square. So she did it, whatever it was. At noon we went to the podium, the President introduced me, they applauded me, and that was the end of my role. I was free to come and go whenever I fancied. We went to a jewellery store, the largest one and I handled to the jeweller one pair of my diamond cufflinks, each being 5 carat of the purest diamond in platinum base.)

- Well, Generalissimo, I am very happy to do business with you. These are historical items, and the purest diamonds I have ever seen in this size or any size. Very rare, these are. I can give you now 50 thousand for each, and because I am sure we will do some business in the future, when I sell it I keep only my percentage and the rest goes to you. OK. Give me your wrist, and the money is on you.

- You don't have too many gemstones here. Are those rare?

- Very rare, Sir. We have some artificial stones, but nowhere near the value of the real ones. Everything is catalogued and made public, the paintings, the stones, so the Lieutenant can show you the exact prices. It is on the computer. I will call you when these are sold. It won't be long I am sure. Anything else you have, you welcome here.

- OK, Lieutenant, it is time we go to a good restaurant. You can tell me about this very nice society I have the fortune to drop into. What was that sign on the jeweller?

- It means she is a Baron, and the gold is the second in line. Silver, gold, platinum is the line upward. There aren't many aristocrats around, and they are all doing something besides because nobody gets paid for nothing. We have no pension, no welfare, but no tax either. OK, there is a small percentage of sales tax for the government, but it is almost nothing and of course the tax on the dividends for the capital redemption. The Officers' Corps get paid from the profit of the economy they direct. This way they are involved to run it better. We have no army, no police, the citizens are the police. You have to pay for your own tuition, but it is very easy. So this is the world of the free. Anybody can go freely wherever she wants to. Your money is your money in reality. By the way, this restaurant is very good. Look at those

beautiful paintings. They're worth a fortune, Cezanne and Monet. We are very fond of the old masters, the genuine gemstones, the precious metals. Too bad the industry needs almost all of those rare metals, so they are quite expensive.

- Who are those naked beggars?

- Well, they are fuck-ups. The redheaded devils they are. There was a screw-up in their genome, and they have the tendency of fighting and not being social to say the least. They are taken to the judge and either somebody takes them in or they will be deported. They are 18 years old, all of them, and here are 16 of them. We have more in other places. Someone didn't pay full attention at that time making their genome that is all. Those things can happen rarely; small price to pay for the advance.

- This whisky is excellent. At least 50 years old.

- Oh, yes, like we wait 50 years for some drink to be ready. What would you say if I told you that it was made maybe yesterday? We have factories and highly developed chemical knowledge. It is artificial, and you won't become drunk from it. The wines are made in factories too. Or you think we will spud and hoe the plant and wait for the fruits? No way. We know almost everything about almost everything. It is better than the original. Knowledge took over, dear. The beef you are eating never walked. The meat is made in factories, using the same or similar process the animal uses to grow muscle. We do not need the animal for this. We have the genes, the material needed for the meat, and we don't have to slaughter animals. And it is much better than the original. This is the age of science. The cars we drive never have accident. The sensors stop the car well before it could happen. You'll see more.

- Unbelievable. Tell me about the Council.

- There are 8 members, all Marshals when in the Council. The Officers' Corps, the Chamber of Engineers, the Academy of the Sciences, the Lodge of the Aristocracy, the NPF, the Vatican who is the Chief Justice too, the Chamber of Commerce and the President. They run the world very ably and efficiently. Well, at least that is what they're advocating to the people. Their two Generals of each are helping them. I personally think they do their job in reality.

- OK. Now what is happening there? Listen. The judge is speaking.

- Here we have 16 delinquents charged with truculence. Who wants to take them? Nobody wants them? So they will be deported to Africa.

- What if I take them, Judge?

- Then you are responsible, you have to feed them, or find employment for them. You can change your mind any time, and they will be deported. Generalissimo, I am not sure you can take care of them. But you have the place for them, undisputable grandiose place you have. They can help you to maintain that ruin. What is your decision Sir?

- I take them. I take all of them.

- So ordered. Let us know if you change your mind.

- We need somebody in that place, Lieutenant. Now, how much is a big family van cost?

- About 2000. They can deliver right now, if you want it. I guess we need to order two. I do it. You have a good heart, darling. They are not bad girls, here they are.

- Thank you, Sir. We are all yours. I always wanted to live in the Castle. But now we are free citizens again, so we'll wait for the goddesses and for the dust of pleasure.

- You don't want to have some clothes on? No pressure, you have the right, OK. What kind of dust you talking about, my dear?

- On every Constantine-Day it is a right to have free dust. It makes us happy, and the goddesses are coming soon. Everybody will be here. We didn't have sex today waiting for them.
- And do you know who and when made that distribution of dust a right?
- It is an ancient right. It was made together with the religion, the goddesses. That was about three and a half centuries ago. The purchase of the dust was restricted about four and a half centuries ago, but on this day only could be had free. You should read the history books. You have a lot to do bringing your knowledge up to date, Sir.
- I see. OK. The Lieutenant will get a van or two, and after the festivities we go home. I want to see these new arrangements. I think I have an idea whose hands and brains are behind it.

The goddesses came just after the distribution of the dust of happiness, and they caused great turmoil. In reality they were kind of Thai beauties, smaller than the northern Aryan type population, and their head wasn't that large either. Otherwise absolute beauties they were. The population went into the state of ecstasy, and in an hour everyone was having orgasm. It was a hilarious view to watch. Then at about midnight the whole Square was calm again, and they went home with the vans. The girls made their own beds temporarily, later they will have their quarter prepared right.

- My dear, we have to sleep about 6 hours, and we have a pill for deep sleep. You want one?
- No, I can sleep without it, and I want to look around a while. But you just go ahead, sleep.

When everybody was in deep sleep, he went to the old logistics room, to the military room, everything was in debris. Papers and things were everywhere in chaos. There was a room for the cleaning supplies and other things of no importance, and he remembered that from here opened a door to the cellar and the basement. But there was no door now. There was a big old safe in the corner. Maybe the door is behind it. He moved the safe, but could see no door. It is strange. One of the bricks was different from the others, so he pressed on it and he could hear a click. The wall was the door. He opened it and got a flashlight. He was sure the old lights down there are out of order, and whoever made this hidden door did it on purpose; didn't want a trace of the basement-entrance. Even in his time it was a well-kept secret. He went down, and found the old wines and whiskies and other rare drinks. Thousands of bottles were there, just like before. It is nice, but what to do now? These are without any value at all. He opened a whisky bottle, and the drink was still good. The wine was fine also. Well, there was an entrance here down to the belly of the mountain, and he had explored it with the master of the cellar and with his kids many times. The door here was walled in, but he could find the opener brick quickly now and went down. What he saw was the miracle. Something was there in hermetically locked cases, a mountain of it, could be many thousands of tons. He opened one case, and in it also hermetically sealed kilos bricks of cocaine were. He tasted it, and it was still efficient. Just like the dust they distributed to the population that day. Except that now they distributed synthetized cocaine. It is still not enough. He cannot become a drug dealer. He had no idea where to go from here. The flashlight caught a gleam on the wall. He looked at it, and it was a gold sheet. He took it off. In ancient Hungarian letters there was a sentence. "The truth is on the other side, my friend". He turned the gold sheet, and cleaned the other side, and there was a blueprint of the labyrinth. In the corner of the cocaine-room

was a very sophisticated door in the floor. He opened it, and went down. The room was empty, but there was a door in the wall, and he followed the marks on the wall and on the blueprint. He went to a big room, and then he just stood there. It was full of drawers and boxes and sacks. He opened a drawer. In it he found diamonds. Thousands of them, with the quality and carat are written on the list in every drawer. Every drawer was full of diamonds, sapphires, rubies, in exact order by quality and size. He opened a sack. It was jam-packed with loose jewellery, necklaces, rings, bracelets, and everything else. He chose some and pocketed some gemstones and old half-ounce and one-ounce sized platinum and gold coins, and he went up. Just in time, because the girls were already up. He didn't realize how long he was down there exploring the treasures. This night he will survey the labyrinth more. Now he understood the works on the coca-fields and the deficit of the precious stones. Cocaine is power by itself, and would have been used to gain control if he found this society in turmoil or some politically unacceptable form. Felix had thought about it right, like a real revolutionary he was. It is still useful. He was sure he didn't see the majority of the treasures yet.

They ordered food, and he went to sleep. A pill helped, and he needed the sleep. The girls made their rooms comfortable; they went with the Lieutenant to buy bed-ware and clothes, and whatever they needed. He transferred money from his wrist to the Lieutenant's. It was easy. Afternoon the girls painted their rooms, and made their home. Then everybody ended up in the Turkish bath, and had a good time shamelessly and openly. They explored the body of a real, living male, but had their own normal sex with each other and with the Lieutenant as well. It was like a nice big family. After they went to sleep, the exploration of the labyrinth continued. He found paintings in one room, the greatest paintings of the old masters. They disappeared in the great wars they said now. Yeah, right. They didn't know that those wars were not conventional wars, none of them were. They collected the paintings back then. But let them believe in whatever they want. Unbelievable collection of paintings was there, catalogued. He will explore them later. The list was enough now. In one room he found gold and platinum sheets and coins by the tons. Old coins too. Finally he was in the lowest level. There were many great rooms filled with the missing gold, platinum, silver and rare metals. The total amount of the missing precious metals of the world was there. A total of about 175 thousand tons of gold was mined as he remembered as of his time in human history, and it became ever scarcer. It can be fitted in a cube of about 21 metres each side. The gold he had there was about 100 thousand tons. The platinum is much rarer and in great need by the industry. There is just a given amount of both on the Earth, and even if we didn't know how much platinum we have in the Earth, he remembered about 10 thousand tons was mined by his time in history, and the yearly production was about 180 tons. Here is at least 5 thousand tons, but have to check the documents. And there is the silver, a mountain of it. Palladium is there. Very rare, very much needed by industry. About 4 thousand tons have been mined, as he remembered, and here is at least 2.5 thousand tons of it. Titanium is there in another room by the thousands of tons. Rhenium, rhodium, and who knows what else is here; all needed by the industry. So we have the explanation why there is a shortage. And why the industry cannot just develop as it should. Well, they figured out how to substitute them with other materials, but this is what really needed. In another room were the lost statues of the old masters. The kids had to make sure that the resources won't be enough to increase the number of humans ever again over 2 billion. They have succeeded. The paintings and the statues were just

some insurance, a wild guess that those would be high-priced. They calculated right. The mountain under the Castle contains the resources. Very well, but how on Earth can he ever get all this out of here? Finally he found the door, and he went to the outside; the remnant of the old service-road was right there, but unfeasible, out of order, a truck cannot be driven on it. No problem. Nobody could detect that door from the outside. Nobody came here anyway. He locked the hidden door to the road, went up and pocketed some pure platinum, gold and silver coins and sheets, some gemstones and loose jewellery. When he went up, they were still asleep. He had his own work-room where the archives were in great disorder. It is a good pretence to be there for longer, and excellent hiding place for the goodies. After everybody woke up, they had breakfast together.

- I will visit the jeweller, my dear. Would you find out if I could have this Castle and everything in it as my own? What are the conditions, and so on? I don't want it to be demolished.
- Won't be easy, but I will find out. Do you think you can restore it? That could be a condition; a wild guess, knowing the thinking process of the 1750 cm<sup>3</sup> brain of the Marshals.
- Just see to it, and I will talk to the President Marshal. Order some uniforms for the redhead devils. Jogging clothes will do for now, and T-shirts, running shoes in black, white and red colours. We have to start some training for them. Ask how many other redheaded are all over the world, and other fuck-ups too. Don't worry about the finances.

He drove the car to Downtown. The jeweller invited him to an inside room. He gave her the collection of gold, platinum and silver coins and sheets, and the diamonds, rubies, sapphires. She was looking at it with the greatest pleasure.

- The platinum cost 1600, the gold 1200, the silver 400 per gram. It is easy to calculate, here we are. The gemstones are really the best quality. Let me see... Altogether it will be about 15 million. I knew we are going to do business. And I owe you 30 thousand more for the cuffs. Give me your wrist. Done. Now, if you like, I can do your business anonym, if you don't want others to know. Your secret is safe with me. The Chamber of Engineers is always in need of precious metals and rare metals. They publish their needs, and the price they pay. Here, take a look. Take your time. The point is, anybody can open a mine or factory, so can calculate if it is profitable or not. You can even negotiate the advertised prices with them.
- Is there a storage place I can put something and no one knows about it except you and I?
- Yes. I drive you there, I give you one key, and we talk later.
- OK. Let's go. On the way you can enlighten me about that business in the Square with the goddesses and other things.
- Very well. The goddesses are the Vatican basically. They are in charge of the resurrection.
- Say it again. You said resurrection? How?
- Well, we, as individuals are all part of the oneness. We, common people have the same genome; everybody is a perfect replica of anybody else. Good thing we all need only one size of clothing, but we make our own hairstyle and colour. The only difference is the memory we accumulated during our lifetime. We are designed the way that we have this beautiful sand-glass shaped body up to the age of about 100 years, and then it cannot keep up with the production of the hormones, and we start getting out of this shape. That is the time when everybody knows it is time for the rebirth. Nobody wants to live in an out of shape body, and her

memory at that time will be too crammed, congested. Life itself will become boring, they say. They cannot enjoy it fully, nothing can excite them anymore. Besides, it is our duty for mankind to finish our life at one point. You don't see anyone with an out of shape body; they would be ousted from society not doing their duty. So she goes to the goddesses, and they make her sleep the best way possible after she receives the most hilarious orgasm there is, and then a new life will be created with the same genome, so it is a rebirth, a resurrection, but with a clear memory, so life would become a joy again. It is simple, it is scientific, and it is necessary. This religion was created about three and a half centuries ago, when they had discovered the creation of the babies in a completely artificial way. It solves many problems, and it is the work of a genius. She has a statue in every city.

- Yes, she really was a genius. So finally she did it. I am glad. She was my deputy. A real gem she was. The great game of craps; it was worth gone playing that night.

- OK. We are here. A big truck can go in, no problem. Here is the key. Let's take a look inside. You also want to know that the major powers in the Council are the Chamber of Engineers and the Lodge of the Aristocracy. They are almost always on the opposite side, and the President keeps up the equilibrium. To become the member of the Aristocracy is the real currency of the society. We have basically everything, so we need the rank in the society. With rank we can have more kids to adopt, more girls to get into bed with, more power, more rights to criticize or voice opinion. The rank we name according to the old Continental titles. Baron, Count, Prince, and at the top the Great Prince, who is a Marshal when in the Council.

- I am aware of the workings of society. I wrote the book on it. So why don't you widen the gap? More distinction of aristocratic titles means finer tunes in the ladder of society.

- It could be done, but we got used to this system. And the new member has to buy the precious metal, and the Chamber wants all of the precious metals for the industry. The circuits of the brains of the robots and machines are made of gold and silver. They want to refurbish soon, and they will need every gram of it.

- OK. How old are you? I never can tell. Everybody looks agelessly young.

- Up till about 85 or 90 you can't really tell the difference. Our bodies are created the way that it keeps producing the hormones we need to look young and pretty, and that uses up lots of energy. I am 40 now, so quite young. I also have 5 other stores around the world, so everything you have will be appreciated. And we are back. I'll sell what you've brought very fast.

- I understand. More to come. See you soon.

At home the Lieutenant said they do not know if the title of the Castle can be given to him, they have to check. Anyway, they don't need it, but can't leave it as it is now, and they don't want to spend money on it. The industry needs an overhaul now, and that is the place all the money should go. The President wanted to see him personally in this matter in front of the Council, tomorrow. There are 254 more gingers all over the world. And there are some other fuck-ups too, maybe 10 of them. Not bad for the great advancement science has had during that time. The joggings, T-shirts, shoes have been delivered. Good. He studied the needs of the industry, compared it with the list of stock he had underneath the Castle, and found it an easy order to fulfil. He discovered something in one diamond-filled drawer, a piece of paper; a very interesting piece of deed. His kids really were smart. They spent the evening in the bath again, and every girl was happy and satisfied. They have found a home they said. At

night he went to the cellar, opened couple of bottle of whisky and cognac and measured some cocaine. He dissolved the coke in the drinks. He made a package for the jeweller, hid all and went to sleep. In the morning he delivered the goodies to the shop, received another 15 million, and gave the jeweller a bottle of whiskey gift. Later he went to the Council.

- OK, Generalissimo, so you want the title for the Castle.

- A clear title is what I want. No state-financing, no need to worry about the up-keeping of it. I will renovate it. The Academy has produced some people you call defective some years ago. Those people need a home, and I can provide that home. I have a plan. 254 more red-headed girls are all over the world. I'll take them, so the state will have no troubles with them, also the other screw-ups; your screw-ups. I do not ask for much, only what is mine. That Castle was on my name before, and I don't remember signing it over to anyone, not to the State. I have the original title from the archive, here it is. It comes with the title of Generalissimo. Remember, I am the one you can thank for the society you have today. By the way, I have found some real whisky and cognac hidden in the Castle. Please take it as a gift. I also want to organize the archive of the Castle. Valuable papers, documents are there. So I want the Castle what you name a ruin and everything what is inside it. Here, please taste the drinks of my age. Half a millennium and some more years old, just like me.

- Well, thank you, Generalissimo, we will... Not bad at all. I think the Generalissimo has a point. It was our fault to produce those delinquents of the society, and it is our responsibility to take care of them. The Generalissimo will save lots of money for the state, and provides great service. In reality the title was his, but the caretaker, the State took it over long ago.

- The Lodge has no objection. He can even be received into the aristocracy in time. Great name he has and grandiose personality in history. We appreciate what you have done, Generalissimo. You would be received in any party. Everyone would be delighted to listen to your stories. We do know who you are, Sir. That was one reason we had a close vote on your revival. I hope you do understand the pro and contra.

- The Academy won't object. Those people are our fault; the least we can do, reinstating the original owner of the Castle and let the delinquents live there.

- The Chamber of Commerce thinks the Castle should be kept as long as possible. He can have it. It is useful for the tourists in this city too.

- Any objections? None. All right, Generalissimo, so ordered. The title is yours free and clear as it is now, everything inside and out is yours, together with the responsibility to keep it in good shape. This afternoon we'll have it delivered to you. This cognac is really something. I am feeling very well. You people knew something long ago; at least you made great drinks.

- I can send you some more. Thank you for the rationality. I am really very happy that my life-work produced a society of wonderful people. Here is for you, Marshal.

- Maybe someday you can tell us some stories we have read only in the history books.

- Of course. After the renovation you will be invited for a party.

At home he told her to order the service road to be repaved all around; the main road and entrance renewed, and the whole Castle renovated on the outside, and told her to collect all the redheads and other fuck-ups to the yard.

- And just how do you want to pay them? It is about 20 or 30 million. They come with enormously great machinery, and front of if no road, behind it the road is ready. Also the renovation is done by robots. It cost money, honey. They want something in advance.

- Here, I put 10 million on you. The rest is secured by the clear title I will get any moment now. Order some cars for the girls, so they can go to the city. Girls, sport cars will do? And Jeeps or whatever is the name for it now. OK. Since the Castle is private territory, none is permitted to come here. So your vigilance is needed, and you will patrol around the Castle and the road here. Am I understood? Good. Do you have money? I thought so. OK, come, all of you, I put 5 thousand onto each of you, in case you need it.

- The roads and the outside can be done in 3 weeks, maybe less, depends what you want.

- I want good, wide roads, and the best cover they have for the outside. Ask the engineer to come and talk to me. Maybe the inside of the reception room and gala rooms and saloons can be done at once. She has to see and make some calculation.

- OK, she will be here tomorrow morning. I still don't know how you'll pay for it.

- For once and for all time to come, you never ask me this question ever again. I am not used to be questioned by anybody, Lieutenant. Am I understood? But I love you.

- OK, I forgot who I am talking to; once the absolute master of the world. Love you too.

Next morning the engineer walked around the Castle with him, looked it up, made some notes, calculations, and with the inside of the Castle, except the living quarters he came up with 35 million.

- We use the best machinery, the best materials, three weeks I would say, but maybe less. I need 10 million in advance. Thank you, and tomorrow we will be here and working day and night. We use great machines and robots, very expensive ones, and we use the best material, will last almost forever. You will be satisfied, Sir.

In three weeks the Castle was like new. The reception rooms were draped and painted too, additional works will be done by masters of hand-painting and woodworks. During the works the gingers arrived in small groups from all over the world. They made their living quarter, painted, and draped. Almost every day he delivered small amounts of goodies to the jeweller, and had more than enough money to pay for the renovation. Every time he delivered the jewels they had lunch together in the nearby restaurant. They've got to like each other. Life was good; he is already one of the richest in the world, with clear title of a Castle, unbelievable riches inside of it. When everything was ready, including the road to and around the Castle, the masters started their work, but they didn't bother anybody, because the reception rooms were a long way from the living places. He purchased a big truck and two fork-lifts. He couldn't trust anybody, and didn't want anybody to know what he has in the labyrinths. He had to do it himself, and he was fit enough to do it. When everybody was asleep, he drove a car to the storage where he kept the truck, and with one forklift on it he drove it to the gate in the wall. It was hidden, and could only be opened from the inside, what he already has done before. So he could open the gate from the outside, drove the truck in, closed the gate and with the forklift he loaded the truck with 10 tons of platinum, 10 tons of titanium, 10 tons of gold, 10 tons of palladium, 2 tons of rhodium, and other metals listed by the Chamber of Engineers as absolutely necessary. He drove the truck to the storage, and using the forklift he

left there he unloaded the goodies, left the truck, locked the door and drove the car back to the Castle. It was already morning, the girls in vigilance. They seemed to enjoy it.

- A little drive, Sir? I didn't see you going out.

- I just couldn't sleep. Beautiful morning, isn't it? OK, one thing you all have to memorise once and for all. I am not to be questioned, my dear, ever again. My comings and goings is none of your concern. Now, you call all the girls to the field at the back of the Castle. 15 minutes you have to be there.

They were there in 20 minutes.

- OK, girls. You are all familiar with the Castle. You have your home here. You have to do something with your life. I have decided that I will train you, drill you to be the soldiers of this beautiful age of ours. You like to make trouble; you all like to fight civilians. You will become professional, trained fighting machines. The drill will be hard. She, who doesn't want to participate, step ahead and she is still free to stay or go. Nobody. All right. Now, make a military formation. Very good. You are born soldiers. Take your clothes off. Get naked, except the shoes. Very good. You are all 18. You will choose your leaders, because the real leader will manifest her, and it will be clear for everybody. Now, as a warm-up, you run around the Castle on the service-road, and you will train always naked, just like the Spartans had done every day. Read about them. Now, your training starts. Go, girls.

- This is a great idea, dear. Somebody very soon will ask you, what the hell the Generalissimo needs a private army for. But for training, that is a different story. They enjoy it. And it is quite a stimulating spectacle. They are or will be together against the world.

- Now they might look at it that way, against the society which outlawed them and cast them out. They want revenge, and revenge they will have. Give me the phone, dear. I have to make a call... Very good, girls, it was 5 km around. Are you tired? Now you do push-ups, 20 at a time, followed by 20 squats. 20 times will be enough. Do it. Darling, the GYM used by my body-guards is empty. Order every kind of machines and weights there, and boxing sacks, make it a good GYM. They'll need it. Talk to the tailors and design some spectacular uniform for the girls. They can somehow copy the old Byzantine body-guards' uniform, or something like that. They have the large brain, they must know better. Do it together with the girls. They choose. I want them to look perfect for the party. OK, girls. It is enough for start. We don't want your muscles to ache. What makes you different from others? That is the colour of your hair. So you are going to shave it off. You have that beautiful large head. Show it. We have to design some caps as well. OK, you will have a GYM, you run every morning and evening, and you will design a hand-fighting technic which is the best for you. You will have 4WDs, and real weapons later. You think and you come up with the solutions. You are dismissed.

- Dear, please take a look at the 10 fuck-ups. Here they are.

- What is wrong with them? They look all right to me. Well, those three with the oversized bosom are really sexy. Jesus, to look at it closely, they are enormous breasts. That is all?

- Basically, yes. They didn't want a plastic surgery. They like it as it is. Also, they are a little too oversexed. I mean the normal person requires about 3 or 4 orgasm a day, while these are sex-machines with unlimited need of orgasm. They can come just by caressing their tits, so that is the reason they want to keep them. They are good. I tried them. Yeah. The other 7 are

submissive. They need somebody to tell them what to do. Great helps. Very smart, but submissive, they are happy to serve someone.

- OK, you are all welcome. Make your home in the Castle, girls.

He drove to the jeweller afternoon. The Chamber has taken the metals away, and they paid 5 billion in cash and 20 billion in stocks with the interest rate of 5% for 20 years. So within 20 years the capital will be paid; just as he's made it in his time. The stocks have the same properties as the capital on which it was issued. They amortised. That was the failure of capitalism before, that didn't understand the difference between the interest on the money loaned and the interest on the capital stocks issued. The interest on money is the payment for the allowing of non-repayment until the loan was repaid. The interest on the capital was the reward of the investment on the capital as the agents of production in production; this kind of loan can never be repaid, but a yearly amount of dividend should be paid to the owner of the stocks out of the profit the capital produced compared with the price of the consumer goods if the capital, the agents of production didn't exist. The problem is, it cannot be calculated, so the dividend is some kind of a reward to the investor for investing instead of consuming. But it cannot go on forever, but it should have amortised together with the agents of production, machines, and factories and so on. 20 years' time-limit should be imposed on the life-time of the stocks and tax should be paid on it, about 20%, which income of the State must be used only for the purchase of stocks, so the society will own the original private investment in time. It is called capital-redemption, and it is a must in order to avoid the economic *perpetuum mobile* of the second kind, the riches accumulated for the expense of the whole society basically for nothing, for one investment only. The two kinds of loans are essentially different, but were mixed together. No wonder the economists couldn't solve anything before his age. Thinking wasn't their strongest field. Making up debts what they knew about, with no limitation. He ended this scheme long ago. These people today understand it very well.

The next night and every night for the next ten days he delivered 40 tons of silver each day to the storage, and the Chamber paid with stocks. It was a lowered price, but 100 billion (using here the American numbering, which is milliard in Europe) in stocks worth 2 billion a year minus the 20% taxation for 20 years plus the capital. With this quantity of metals one part of the industry could be renewed, the production multiplied, the robots' circuits made, and the machines modernized. Now he was the richest man on Earth and his stocks were still almost intact in the belly of the Castle-hill.

The girls looked nice bald-headed, and they were very proud of their baldness. They shaped themselves up, they run 20 km a day, and trained in the GYM as well. Their uniform was beautiful, military-like, in three different colours. The leaders have been chosen, and the battalion was organized. There were 10 soldiers in a squad, 3 squads made a platoon, 3 platoons made a company, and 3 companies made the battalion. 270 soldiers he had. The leader of all was a very bright self-conscious and gentlemanly soldier with strong and explicit qualities. Temporarily they had the rank insignia on the uniform as a stripe, one for the leaders of the squads, two for the leaders of the platoons, three for the leaders of the companies, and four for the leader of the battalion. They watched old movies of kung-fu, judo, aikido, and they

read the books on the training of the Byzantine body-guards. They came up with the technics best for them. In time they've developed a very effective martial-art. Every squad had a 4WD like the old Hummel. The NPF used those, so for the battalion they have ordered 27 of those, plus one for the leader and two for spare. They ordered the Cross of Malta to be painted on the side of the vehicles. The girls had to learn to repair their cars and 4 WDs.

The masters have finished their work in the Castle, and it was very satisfactory. They got paid generously. The reception room, the saloons, the ballroom were all exquisite, beautiful. There was one more work to do. At night he brought some statues of the Greek and Roman ages to the garden, and in the daytime the soldiers put them into places. He also hung some paintings to the walls in the ballroom, the saloons, and the reception room. Altogether 15 statues and about 50 paintings of medium value were displayed. In the saloons he displayed very rare well-preserved books from the XVI – XIX centuries, coins of old monies, and crown-jewelleries of old kings and princes. It was party-time. The marshals and the dignitaries of Byzantium were invited, and they came to see the renewed Castle and the soldiers. Their first surprise was the uniformed courteous soldiers who received the cars and parked them away, gave instructions, checked the list and the names, and escorted the guests and pronounced their name and title. They looked spectacular, were beautiful, strong, and nobody has seen anything like it before.

- Well, Generalissimo, you have done a good job regulating those delinquents. I am happy we gave the Castle to you. It is beautiful.
- Thank you, Marshal, enjoy. For the record, you only reinstated the original owner. Small matter, don't mention. You can find some old real drinks somewhere. Just ask the girls for it.

Everybody asked for it. They were having a good time, enjoying the ancient drinks laced with coke, the paintings, the rare books, and the jewellery. Later he walked with the curator of the Museum to the statues, and told her that he just found some old things somewhere, like the statues, the books, the coins, and he thinks it would be best if they were displayed in the museum. The value of those things was enormous. The curator was a Prince, but he couldn't decide on this matter alone, so he called the Great Prince there, and they discussed the matter.

- The Museum cannot possibly pay the book-value of those things. Now the making up those very high values has its back-lash. We never thought these items ever come to life again.
- I am not asking for payment. You misunderstood me. I want to donate some of those things. Say 10 statues of your choice, the books you see here, and the coins you see here. I would give you 20 paintings too. Or rather it is the Lieutenant who donates. I want her to become a Count, Gold grade.
- It is very generous offer. She is a great help to you. I think we can have a deal. But it is unusual to become that high rank of the aristocracy at the first time. I can offer the Baron Platinum now, and after her party the Count Gold for some more donations. We have to keep the tradition. She has to give a party, you know.
- All right. Tomorrow send the truck for the statues. It is good to talk with highly educated, intelligent people. I wish in my age I was surrounded by brains like yours.

- You've made it possible, Generalissimo, we all know that. We just have to know you better.  
- Perfectly understood and accepted, Great Prince. What would you say if we made more distinction in the grades of the aristocracy? Now you have three grades of Barons, the insignia being a sword. What if we made it like one, two and three swords in every metal? Nine grades it would mean. And the Counts have the shield and the sword. It could be similarly one, two and three swords, so 9 grades altogether. The Princes have the coronet. It could be made one, two and three peaks. The Great Prince could have the crown with diamonds. What do you think? More distinctions, more aristocrats, and the society would be more cohesive. The teleological conqueror more explicit, more pronounced.

- I have been saying this for years. We don't have enough metal for this. An insignia is about 2 or 3 grams. A million people would mean 2 or 3 tons of precious metal. The Chamber would resist. They're always against the use of precious metals for jewellery.

- No, they won't. I guarantee they get what they need. The rest is none of their business. Besides, they could be involved too. The engineers can have insignia. That is a rank, a good one.

- The Princes will support it. I support it. You talk to the Chamber, and if they are satisfied, we will decide on the matter. Tomorrow the truck will be here for the statues.

He talked to the jeweller to ask the Marshal of the Chamber if the industry needs more of the precious metals. He did, and the answer was that they need 10 tons of platinum, 10 tons of gold and 100 tons of silver more, to make that part of the industry ready completely, but it could be more. It is only the metals required right now, so they don't have to make the more expensive artificial material or work the mines to replace the metals. After the party the next day the museum removed the statues, the books, and the coins, and the Lieutenant received the Baron Platinum degree certificate, which will become final after she has had her party given. It was like the marriage in the Middle-Ages, when it became final after it was consummated. Now he had to deliver the metals to the storage, and in three nights he finished it. The stocks received made him very rich indeed. The Chamber was insured that the industry will have the necessary precious metals, so there was no obstacle in the multiplication of the grades of the aristocracy. In two weeks her party was given. Here the counts and the princes discussed the matter, and the Great Prince finalised the new grades. Now the jeweller needed the metals for the insignias. The original stock was still almost there in the labyrinth. Nobody knows about the treasure, everything is all right, but even if they knew, the title is his, and everything in it also is his property. But better if he keeps a low profile.

- My friend, you have achieved a lot in no time. Are you familiar with our society completely by now? Because it is a sophisticated edifice, and I am not sure you understand every little corners of it.

- Probably not, but you will tell me. More interesting is your economy. I went to the factory where they make the whiskey. I wanted to see it myself. It is unbelievable. I am already rich, so I do not have any problems, and I am very much interested where everything ended up I lived and fought for. The drinks they make are excellent. I tasted everything, the cognac, the gin, the whisky, and more. Right in front of my eyes they made the 50 year old whisky. I went to see the factory here where they make the meat. It's unbelievable. The meat is made in a container. No need to slaughter animals. And the meat is better, tastier; they make every

kind of it. The people I talk to are intelligent, helpful, and everybody is beautiful. Did you know that in my time some idiot philosophers said: if everybody is beautiful then there is no way to differentiate, so the ugliness is necessary to distinguish the beauty? It is the logical outcome of the stupidity went loose and the liberals' mind was wasted away. I mean you couldn't even argue with them, they were so stupid. They had to come up with new theories every time the old ones amortised, and those idiocies amortised very fast. But even when it was clear to everybody that they are stupid and they say idiotic things, they still defended the theory which was never true.

- What did you do if you couldn't argue with them?

- I killed them. I had to. They were dangerous. The idiot, who thinks he is genius and has followers, is dangerous. In ideology I never argued after I constructed my theory and it was proven true. When I came to power I collected these liberal democrats, and put them to a prison cell. I gave them my ideology and I asked them to confute it, asked them for a rebuttal. Then one by one I talked to them, and when I realized that they cannot be saved for humanity, I shot them. None of them could confute anything, only repeated the same old stupidities about equality and democracy, and so on. None could answer the question what democracy is, or equality is. Their IQ was just average, even the esteemed professors' IQ. We measured that, and that was just very unsatisfactory. They were monkeys, repeating something they have heard long ago. Of course, most of them were Jews. The Jews were the plague of the humanity. I killed them all, and I did it with great pleasure. The world became a much better place without them. In the Middle-Ages every country became a better place after the Jews were expelled from that country, and became a much worse place after they were permitted to relocate in that country. Liquidating them was necessary, and the liberal democratic idiocies were over, null and void immediately. No man with a healthy mind would defend that stupidity. I have to cool down now. Waiter, bring me a whisky, please.

- We can ask for a reason. I mean when the Council have a decision, they have to justify it. If someone is not satisfied with it, she can argue with it and the Council have to answer. They always justified their decisions after the first rebuttal from somebody. They are smart. But the Generals are maybe smarter with the bigger brain of theirs. It means you can talk to them. They are more like doers, not conservatives, like the Marshals. With money you can do many good things. They are not against it. But it will become necessary to justify the keeping of that private army of yours. I wouldn't wait for the questions if I were you. And get a rank in the aristocracy, my friend. It is my best advice. The higher you go, the more you can say.

He went to the Marshal of the Officers' Corps and asked her to promote the Lieutenant to the rank of Captain at least, because she is doing all the logistics for the Castle, and 280 people. The Marshal said she will consider it. Every Marshal had two Generals for aides. She gave the matter to one of her aide to make recommendations. The General visited the Castle, looked into the affairs of the Lieutenant, and submitted her recommendation. In the meantime they talked a lot about the affairs of the State with the General while there, drinking some good old whisky. It was very informative discussion. The General told him many things only an insider would know. Her tongue became very loose drinking the laced old drinks. In a week or so the document was delivered to the Castle. The Lieutenant has been promoted to Captain. She also received from the Lodge the grade of Count Gold, two swords for some

more donations. The new grading was in effect now. There was time for another party. There was time to bring out more valuable statues, treasures, codex and paintings.

(- We are jumping in time without mentioning that many weeks or months elapsed in between those happenings and parties. I just have to make this correction for the record. But of course you just keep on, going with your own speed. Someone who will read this may be confused amongst the too many things and timeless storytelling. OK, continue as you want. Never mind the people who might read it sometime.

- The point is taken.)

- My dear, the Marshal, the President of the Council surely will come. Last time she and the big-bosom girl really had some good time together. She told me later. Well, that nymphomaniac always ready for sex with anyone or alone. As you know, the Marshal lives alone. She is 75 now, would you say? No, I thought so. So she really got to like the big-bosom girl, and they went to a little private room. I think it is love, my dear. I mean the Marshal surely loves her, and she has to catch up with lots of sex she missed lately. We have lots of statues and codex my dear. Too many things can fit into that archive, I would say. OK, no questions.

The party started at 8, the guests were received by the soldiers in red uniform, with black caps, the Che-Guevara-type, and at the entrance stood erected the old Venus and Aphrodite statues, in the reception room more statues, paintings on the walls of the ball-room and the saloons. The cocaine-laced ancient drinks were served, and the mood of the multitude very soon went very high. The cocaine is very good substance; if someone drinks it she needs a little more, but has the same effect as sniffed up.

- Marshal, before anybody would start an inquiry I want to tell you about this private army as you would call it. These girls are the kernel, the core of a new Order to protect society as it is now. I just want to tell you this, because I don't like the rumours around the populace. I made this state of affairs possible, and I would be the last person to do harm to it. Improvement is possible, but we can discuss that matter. Just give a little more time, and I'll prove it. By the way, Marshal, one of my adopted girls told me that she would like to visit you more often. I know you invited her couple of times, and she was so happy to visit you. I don't really like this arrangement, I have to tell you.

- But Generalissimo, I am so lonely. Sometimes I need some company.

- Exactly, Marshal. Come here, my dear. So she asked me and I decided it would be much better arrangement if she lived with you for good, I mean she is yours. And don't worry about the people. You are the most important person, and if you love someone, it is your perfect right to do so. She won't go to you empty-handed either. She will receive the amount every month matching your salary, and she has her own car and things too. Would you receive her?

- Well, it won't be necessary to give her anything, Generalissimo. I would be very happy to have her of course.

- But I insist, Marshal. OK, dear, you have the last word.

- Oh, yes, I love the Marshal. Thank you, Sir. Come, Marshal, I show you some of my things in my room. Don't worry, nobody is watching us.

- That was easy. She is always horny. I wish the establishment of our Order would be this easy. One just hopes you can make it easy.
- It will be, my Commander. Look around. Everybody is chatting with the girls. It means they accepted them. Now they are not the ginger devils anymore. Come with me. It is time to become the member of the aristocracy for me. Where is the Great Prince? There she is, conversing with the curator. Excuse me, Great Prince I would like to introduce you the Commanding officer of the Castle.
- It is a pleasure. You really have made a marvellous job converting those wild things to gals of the society. I love the shaved heads, it is something new. Their manner is exquisite.
- It is only the beginning. I noticed your interest in the codex and the paintings. Well, I drove in front of the Opera and the Concert Hall one day, and I found it needed a little face-lift. Then I went inside, and I decided that those're really in need of a thorough renovation. It is the end of the season now, so I talked to the architect and some masters, and they could finish it by the beginning of the next season.
- It would cost lots of money, my friend. We cannot afford it.
- I will pay for it, naturally. I also decorate the inside and outside with the paintings of the great masters, with the statues you see here, and I promise you, it will be more beautiful than ever before. You are going to have larger audience for higher prices. They'll go all right.
- In exchange? Let me guess. OK, I have guessed. But as I told you it is unusual to promote someone immediately to high rank. You start the works, and I guarantee the Count gold, two swords. You finish the Opera or the Hall; you become Count platinum, three swords. You finish and give us everything, and you receive the Prince platinum three peaks crown, highest grade. You wouldn't settle for less, would you? Of course, I wouldn't do it for less either, if I were you. Do we have a deal? Those codex and treasures will be displayed there too.
- Of course, Great Prince. It is so good to know that the affairs are in able hands. They will start the works tomorrow. About the statues and codex, and 8 paintings of your choice, I'm having a hard time to keep those here. So if you would be so kind and remove 6 statues tomorrow to the Museum, the Captain's donation, she would be happy to deliver the paintings and the codex herself. She's very much in love with the platinum, I can't change her mind.
- I understand. And the number three is her favourite number, I believe. OK. We can do that. I chose the paintings. It would take about a week or two. Traditions, Sir, traditions we have to observe and preserve. This cognac is excellent. Thank you for sending me couple of bottles of it, Generalissimo.
- Now, Commandant, you have learned something, I hope. You will be at home in the High Society very soon. So the Captain will be highest grade Count, I will be the highest grade Prince; it is time to make the new Order. For this we have some hard work to do. First of all, we gamble. We are going to renovate the old Palace-wing of the Castle for a luxury wing.
- That is out of use, and almost a real ruin, Sir.
- But it has the largest, best rooms, the best view, and it was the wing for the dignitaries before. I have ordered a total make-over. They start tomorrow. Why? Well, try to figure it out. How is your training going?
- Very satisfactory, Sir. We have the perfect technics in martial arts, we run 20 km a day, train with weights, acrobatics, and we are masters of driving the automobiles.

- Ride horses as well. I have seen some horses in the park you can rent. I might have some own horses for the Order somewhere. Well, everybody is happy now. The drink is good, the people are nice, and this is the perfect society for now. What happens later, well, who knows? We might make it even better one day.

The works started at the Opera, at the Concert Hall, and at the Palace. He went to the industrial parks to talk to the masters. He saw what they can do, and was satisfied. He ordered an automobile like the old-timer Duisenberg. He loved the contours of those cars. He ordered it with the best engine possible, and it was about one thousand horsepower. He also ordered one smaller for the Captain. Everything is hand-made, the best material available. He asked if someone could make handguns and ammunition after the some old guns he had with him. Of course, even better ones can be made. He also ordered coaches to be made by hand, and bought horses to ride and to haul the coaches. He kept the horses where they were, outside of the city, rented the land and the stables for them and hands to take good care of them. The girls can come here to ride. The masters were very happy. After the works started on the Opera and the Hall, he received the rank of Count as promised, and it meant another party, together with the Captain, who was promoted to Count highest grade. It was the usual reception, new statues in front, and again, everybody was there.

- How are you, Marshal? You look blooming.
- I have the reason for that, Generalissimo. Telling you the truth, I have never had so satisfying sex in my life. It helps me with the work, you know.
- I am happy to hear that. Now, I have a question. To establish a new Order would be the concern of the Council? There is no law against it as I know.
- Anyone can establish a new order. But it is empty without giving a purpose for it. So if you want to do so, you can, but it becomes recognized officially if it serves society and your purpose to serve the society is acknowledged by the Council as valid and necessary. What is in your mind?
- Well, the protection of the goddesses and the members of the Council and the Generals will be good enough reason?
- There were incidents in the past and in the near past. The goddesses were insulted by the mob. Not meaning to cause harm to them, but the too much love they've received. The people become mob sometimes. As the protection of the Marshals, there were also incidents before. But you have to get the agreement of the Vatican for this. You have mine.
- Thank you, Marshal. So it is not the concern of the aristocracy, because this order will have nothing to do with them. But I will ask the Great Prince nonetheless. She likes to be important, and she is a Marshal also.
- Well, you may do so. And she is the greatest gem of our society here, being the director of the Opera and Concert Hall, and the conductor of our orchestra. Yeah, why not have her agreement too?
- If we have the Order, then the Captain will have a lot more to do. Would you ask the Officers' Corps if her promotion to Major would be possible? I just don't feel like to intervene too much. By the way, my dear, you have left here couple of your jewellery when you moved to the Marshal. Come, dear, I give them to you. If you excuse us, Marshal. Well, you deserve it.

- I didn't leave any jewellery, Sir.
- Well, you know that, and I know that, but why should anybody else know that? Here, this would be sufficient for both of you. Old fashioned, beautiful. Necklace, earrings, rings; bracelets are here, the whole lot you'll ever need. How do you like to be with her?
- She is smart, teaches me many things. She loves me, I like her. But sometimes I miss my old companions and the countless wild sex. I have an appetite she cannot keep up with. Maybe she would let them visit us sometimes. Or rather I can come here; that would be better.
- Of course. You have your own car, have enough money, you can come here whenever you want, have sex as much as you want. And you can tell me some news about the affairs of the Council too, whatever gossips you can, if you know what I mean.
- Oh, thank you, Sir, I will. And thanks for the goodies. I am yours first, you have to know that. To have sex with you is really different, very satisfying. I will be your ears and eyes, promise you. You made me somebody, and I'll never forget that.
- OK, dear. I always enjoyed your boobs. Visit me regularly and pay attention to her affairs. Now, stop massaging me, you make me aroused. You better go, dear, or we'll be here too long. Oh, hell, we can have some time off.

(- Again, you give too much unsolicited information. Remain inside the contents of the important things. So you screwed her, she became your spy, and you went back to the party. Give the reader the chats here, but stick to the main line of the tale.)

- My friend, for the design and the artworks I have done with the insignias, they give me the Count Gold, two swords. So next time I see you in my home for a party.
- That is good news. By the way, I visited the doctors. They told me I have about 60 years more to live. The serum is working fine. So I hope we will be together for long time.
- Splendid. Do you know what the diamond-dust is for? The engineers need some. They said they need whatever I can deliver. They think I have dust. But someone might have. They pay a lot by the kilo, whatever quantity they can have.
- I think you don't even know what is in your storage. If you check in two days' time, you will find some sacks full of it there. But before you give it to the engineers you better check for pieces you could use for yourself. Do you cut diamonds?
- Yes, I do. OK, I will check, and will have a sieve before I sell the dust. Thanks for reminding me. Now I begin to understand you success in politics in your time. I really envy the Captain. OK, go.
- Come with me, Commander, we'll visit the aristocracy. Ah, Great Prince, I am not really good in music. You are a violin virtuous as I heard you playing, and conductor. The Commander told me to come to you with the question. Do you have any idea what the Stradivari violin supposed to be?
- Oh, Generalissimo, those violins are extinct. The wars, the time, those were the kings of the violins. Today it would be worth millions, if not tens of millions, depends what kind of shape it is in. Priceless, I would say. I wish I could play on one of those.
- See, Commander, I told you. Even in my time it was worth a fortune. The list price of a perfect one today would be 50 million. The sound of those violins was miraculous. Only the greatest artist would appreciate it. I have one in perfect shape. I am mistaken. I had one. I

gave it to the Commander. She wants to present it to you. She would like you to play it at the opening of the Hall.

- You are saying you have a Stradivari? And it is here? And you give it to me?
- The best for the greatest. Come, I show you. But it is the Commander's property. It is here. Take it. Maybe we can hear something great when you play on it.
- It is a real Stradivari. I am crying, sorry. I need a few moments to calm down.

Then, after calming down, she played the Stradivari like a kid. Everybody was amazed. The sound of it made her cry again. She thanked the Commander, the Generalissimo, and promised that at the opening of the Concert Hall she will play it. He never saw anybody be so happy and moved. And he was very happy to make her so happy. That thing should be hers or similarly great artists'. That is not the question of money. A violin should be played. There are more where it came from.

- Now, I don't see any obstacles on the way, Commander. We'll have the Order. The Order of the Knights we call it. We'll have the ranks according to the English order and names. Everybody is a knight. You will take the title of Duke, which is the equivalent or counterpart of the Prince, old English title. The commanders of the companies will become Earls, equivalent of the Count. The leaders of the platoons will become Barons, because that is the same in both order, but will have different insignia, and the Stradivari will take care of it. The leaders of the squads will become Lords, and we will create an equivalent for it in the civilian society soon. The soldiers will be Knights. You all will be addressed as Sir. Our sign will be the ancient Cross of Malta. A small cross, like about 4 or 5 cm will be worn on a ribbon at the throat. Bronze, silver, gold, platinum will be given according to the ranks. We can differentiate further with gemstones. You design the insignias for the uniforms. In time we'll have more battalions. That is the highest organization we go, so no regiment, no division. The commanders of the battalions become Dukes. You become Grand-Duke and command all. Design your flag with this motto on it, here. Any questions?

- What your rank will be, Sir?
- Grand Master. The knights take order only from me; not from any other Marshal or the President. You swear in for me. I like traditions as well. Work out the details with the others. I think after we have the Order, we'll have applicants too. They have to be drilled. Later we'll see. We'll have the Articles of Incorporation soon. It is still a private enterprise. We have to make ourselves useful to society in order to become officially recognized. We wait for the Palace to be ready. Then it is time to take action.

The Palace of the Castle was ready first, then the Opera and the Concert Hall. The Palace had all the luxury the masters could create, no money spared. The great ball-room was stunning. The rooms were like the kings'. Everything was perfect. Silk drapery, hand-made furniture with carvings enwrapped with 24 carat gold coating. The kitchenware was the best handmade porcelain and so on. It was time to visit the Vatican. The Duke and the Earls went with him. They rented a yet. The Marshal of the Vatican received them immediately.

- Marshal, thank you for the reception. As you probably know we have established an Order of the Knights. These young knights here are the commanding officers of the best trained soldiers in the world. Actually, silly me, they are the only ones. They've decided to give their life for the protection of the goddesses. They also will protect the members of the Council. That is the purpose of our visit here. We would like to ask you to give us the privilege to protect the goddesses, and we promise that never again will any mob disturb them anywhere. Our motto is "Vitam et Sanguinem". It is in Latin, means our life and blood for the goddesses. There is some great history behind this motto, except we don't say "sed avenam non" after it, but we aren't here to talk about XVIII century Hungarian history. So, Marshal, we'll fly the goddesses, uniting our fleet with yours. We're going to have a great airplane fleet soon.

- It is very noble purpose, Generalissimo. Unfortunately I cannot give you an answer. But we can ask the goddesses if they want the protection. Please, follow me. It is a one and only time when I will take somebody to the living quarters of the goddesses... And here we are.

They recited again the purpose of their being there, and the goddesses were very curious. They talked among them, and finally they came up with the answer.

- If you will come with us wherever we go, and if you protect us even here too, day and night, we think it would be beneficial. Sometimes even here people disturbed us. All right, Marshal, we agree, so please submit to the Council our approval, and the purpose to the society is given for the confirmation of the Order. When can you initiate the protection?

- Even today. I have another proposal too. The present place of residence of the goddesses in Byzantium is not up to the greatest standards of living and the possibility of protection could fail. So we reconstructed a Palace-wing in the Castle for the goddesses, and it will be absolutely safe and luxurious. Your major duty being in Byzantium, I think you could relocate there greater number of goddesses. If you want proof, we can take you there with some of goddesses and you decide there together.

- All right. This place is little far from everything. If the Palace is suitable, we can relocate there more of our number. But many of us will stay here. We have duties all over the world.

- Very well. Is the Castel Sant'Angelo empty now?

- Yes, it is. It is in great need of renovation. You want it? You renovate it, and it is yours. It will be a proper place for training and HQ in Rome. That is what you want, Generalissimo?

- Yes, Marshal. Thank you. We will start the renewal immediately. We can go if you and the goddesses are ready. Two platoons will be here today. I call them now to get ready and fly immediately.

Of course they found the Palace a good place for residence. The goddesses in Byzantium were moved to the Palace, more came from Rome, and two platoons were stationed in the Vatican to protect the goddesses day and night. Of course the goddesses were so good, they wouldn't let them standing in front of their doors, so the knights were invited in and slept with the goddesses. It was everyone's dream. In the Palace the situation was the same. The Castel Sant'Angelo was renewed and it served as a training ground and HQ in Rome. A company was stationed there later. The Opera and the Hall was ready in time. Filled with paintings and statues, hand-carved and painted, draped with the best silk, it was a marvellous site. The Generalissimo received the title of the Prince highest grade, the Order was accepted by

the Council, and made official. The Captain was promoted to the rank of Major. The reconstruction of the industry advanced with full steam, and they wanted more of the precious metals. It was delivered, and the Generalissimo became a multi-billionaire by the interest on the stocks only, but many times the industry paid in cash as well. The Duisenberg and the Major's car were ready, and he enjoyed the riding, and ordered more types. One day he delivered some gemstones and metals for the jeweller, and they went for a lunch.

(- Well done. You are jumping in time here and there. I feel sorry for the reader. Never mind them, go ahead with whatever comes to your mind. OK, it was just a reminder. No need to answer that.)

- My friend, it was a great concert last week. The donation of the Stradivari was a very generous thing to do. The Great Prince couldn't stop crying on the podium, thanking you and the Duke. You know, from the books I drew a little different picture of you. You have a great heart. I wish I could be in it.

- But you are, my friend, you are. Sometimes I feel like touching you and kissing you. Different picture, you said? Well, you should be at home in high politics first. But later we'll see if that picture is adequate enough. Our business is the business, my friend. I enjoy that also.

- I heard you have acquired some old ships. What for?

- I will reconstruct those freighters. I've bought those as scrap metal. The body is fine, just in need of some make-over. They will be great luxury liners. Many old people want to travel around the world before they go to sleep for resurrection. It would be their dream-journey. But it isn't only for them; I think everybody ought to go around the world once. The old ones will spend their money in the last journey. There will be a casino in every ship. So whatever gold or silver they have, I am sure they will sell there. I think it would be beneficial for you to have a store in every ship. I start with 10 ships and increase the number continuously.

- Very good idea. I will take the shops. Do you want to have kids? Now you can have the brightest ones. The procedure is easy. I have 5, but might adopt more. They manage my business around the world. Who can you really trust? Only your kids you can trust. They inherit, so they increase the wealth. It is a good feeling to have kids.

- I wouldn't want a small child. I am not the family-type, you know.

- You can have 12 years olds if you like. Like those, there. Naked, so they are looking for parents. They are not satisfied with the ones they have, so they get naked, showing they are healthy and want to change family. Come here, darlings. What is your problem?

- The great Generalissimo, I have read a lot about you. Well, lady, we are too smart. The family we live with just cannot understand that I want to be an officer, a logistic officer, and she likes the music better than the work our parents do. We are very good, but need an understanding family to finance our schooling and talents.

- And they are aware that you want to leave them after so many years? It isn't nice to do to them. They spent lots of money for your upbringing. Well, they had the joy as well.

- It isn't nice that they don't want to pay for higher schooling. We are bored with that school. We already know everything. If you take us, you won't be disappointed. We want to be the best geniuses.

- OK, if you say so. Grandiose words, great ambitions. I like that. How to do this adoption?

- I'll do it. We go to the parents, I give them enough money, so they won't say no, they sign, the bureau will accept, and that is all. Just wait here. We'll be back soon.
- I'm just having a flashback. Felix would make his irrefutable offer instead, but this one is more appropriate now, of course. OK, do the paperwork, I wait for you here...
- Well, you have two kids. Now, you girls may want to go and buy some clothes. Or better we go with them. OK, go, choose what you want, we'll go and pay for it. It is nice to have kids. What did you mean you wanted to kiss me? Do you want to come over tonight? No business. Kiss and sex. Deal?
- Deal. A very satisfactory deal I would say.

He drove the kids to home, the Major was happy, and then he went to the docks to take a closer look at the ships. The masters were already working on it, plans are ready, no problem. Later he went to the jeweller's home, and they had a really good time together. She said she could be defective, because she really enjoyed the sex. Well maybe it means that the enjoyment of the sex depends on the partner too. And maybe the Major will be happy that she is not defective. Anyway, he didn't like the secretive side of the whole thing, and he wanted to have two wives, and he disclosed it to the Major.

- Darling, it is a wonderful idea. I have affairs, so why couldn't you? I am very happy that I have my problem solved. I am not a fuck-up after all. Invite her here, you stay with her overnight at her house, it is perfect. At last I will have a real friend in her. Does she have someone at her house?
- Two beauties she lives with, so we won't be alone, don't worry. I am happy you are so nice and understanding. I just love you both.
- But of course, darling. We might have some good time just the three of us. I am normal after all. You just gave me back my self-esteem.

The undertakings proceeded in the right directions. The money, he didn't even know how much he had, the Order was equal to the other departments in the State, at least legally, so in theory he should have had a place in the Council. He knew that, the Marshals knew that, but nobody wanted to do anything about it. Not that he wanted it, but it was good to know that he could walk in anytime and claim his seat. But he didn't want to be just another member. After all, the knights who were assigned to the Marshals and the Generals knew everything what was going on inside leadership of the State, so did he. He knew that the NPF was over basically. The membership, the active guards of the animals and the hunters numbered about 8 thousand. The biologist and other researchers were not in the organization; the Marshal of the NPF was old and wanted to go for resurrection. The Generalissimo wanted to take the hunters with all the equipment they had to the Order. Not all of them, only the young ones for members, the others would work like before as employees. They had helicopters and airplanes and cities all over the best places on the world. Well, he decided he will take over the NPF. As soon as the Order was made official and the outsider youngsters knew what it was about, what the Order is about, the volunteers swarmed the recruitment offices. Only the best were selected, and they had to go through very hard indoctrination. Of course everyone wanted to be close to the goddesses, but they had a long way to go before they could even take a look at

them. The knights proved to be ruthless drill-sergeants. They had to do the exercises daily too, such as running, weightlifting, martial arts, riding horses. The newcomer, who couldn't keep up with them, was eliminated. No, not in the sense and way of the good old times, they only left the Order, that is. To become a knight meant high social prestige, but it required a special mental state of the individual to be able to become a knight. The Maltese cross became a coveted piece to wear. The Order was like the NPF at the beginning, a magnet for the new generation; the rebels of the society just for the sake of rebellion. It was something new, something great, something challenging, and something very hard to be accepted into. It was time to give a party for the highest grade of Prince, but first he went to the Great Prince.

- I think my paintings and statues were long enough in the Opera and the Hall. I would like to remove them. Those things are my property. It says on the papers you signed that I can take them anytime I pleased to do so. Now, I want to give those to the Major and to the Jeweller. They are my darlings.

- But, Generalissimo, you cannot do that. What would the Opera and the Hall become without them? Those are the treasure, one of the main attraction they pay the tickets for.

- I tell you what. I gave those pieces to my darlings. They receive the rank of Prince Gold, and they will leave those items where they are. I think it is a fair deal. Or, they might sign them over to the Opera and the Hall, and the items in question become the property of the institutions. For the Platinum grade they might do that. I think the Stradivari and those items worth that title. They deserve it. By the way, I almost forgot. I found the original handwriting of Mozart, Beethoven, Bach, Ravel, Haydn and some others', the originals of their symphonies. I gave them to my darlings. They will be happy to donate those papers to you, not the Opera, but you, personally. You do what you want with them; donate to the Opera if you want to. I guarantee the originality. Here they are. Take a look.

- That is marvellous. OK, Generalissimo. You've won. Now I can take an inside look and experience some of your political manoeuvres of your time. I admire you. I send the documents after the Lodge's decision. But I don't see any obstacle.

- Politics is the art of actualization, Great Prince. I am glad we have an understanding.

So they had a party for the three of them, being received to the Prince highest grade. Everybody was there again. In the middle of the party the Duke, the Earls and the Barons walked in with two and three goddesses each, and that was unheard and unseen before. The little Thais wanted to be present in a real party, and they asked the knights to escort them. The prestige of the Order rocketed sky-high. The Cross of Malta at their throat made of silver, gold or platinum with embedded ruby, sapphire and diamond, lots of them, shining and flashing. It was made exquisitely for occasions like this. The goddesses wore clothes made of very fine textile one could see through, and underneath they wore only some very small undies made out of gold in front. That was visible for all. Their tits were not covered, except for a diamond or ruby on the nipple. They were laughing and happily chatting, looked very alive and sexy. Together with the knights in uniforms they presented a spectacular view. The TV was there, so the whole world could covet the knights and enjoy the miracle. At the party in a saloon the Generalissimo presented his case.

- We have to think for the society as a whole. How many aristocrats are in the world today? Not even a million. Not even one in two thousand. And we've received many of that number just recently. I say the society which has everything, and we have everything, especially with the industry's reconstruction, we need to involve much more people in the teleological conqueror game. It is a game, and the engineers, the scientists, the technicians; the masters have to be in it. They lose their purpose of life, the salt and honey of life, if we don't create a new lower rank. It would give higher prestige to the present aristocracy exactly because it would be a coveted rank. About 10% of the adult population could be received into the new rank. They would be called the Nobles, the nobility. The insignia could be the wreath of laurel. It represents something, have historical tradition.

- Let's say we accept and approve. How would it be 9 grades? Otherwise I understand you and I approve what you are saying. Society has to be involved deeper.

- I can design the wreaths by the number. One, two or three wreaths of laurel like circles coupling in each other. And the three metals make it 9 grades. It would look like this. Not bad.

- If they would number 10% of the population, the adult population, it would mean about 150 million people. One insignia is about 3 grams, but I have seen bigger, like 10 gram sized. But say 3 grams. It would mean 450 tons of metal. The industry needs the precious metal continuously. We would have to buy back from the people, and that would mean high price. The price of gold and platinum has already risen a little.

- The people who have been received to the higher ranks of society would be required to give up their insignia if the industry needs it. Rank means duty, so it just stored as private property until the state needs that. How much would you need now, Marshal?

- We could use some platinum, gold and lot more silver. It is the best conductor, and needed for the brains of the robots. The gold also needed for the same reason. The platinum can withstand temperature best. If I get 20 tons of platinum, 30 tons of gold and 200 tons of silver in the next 3 months every month, I won't object. With that we could finish the other reconstruction for now. Later we can regain it for the new machines. But as you know, there is always some loss in the process.

- OK, Marshal, you'll have it. Now, to go back to our business, let us create the new rank. It would make many people happy. Our duty is to generate happiness beside the material needs. The people give their money for investment also, by buying the precious metals, and if required they give it up for the industry. The money given up can be used for the development of the robots. This way it is a win-win situation. Very soon more of the menial work will be done by androids. So the people need social life even more.

They agreed, and he delivered the metals to the storage as required by the Marshal, and the jeweller needed lots of metal to manufacture the insignias. She had a factory for that. And the Generalissimo became ever richer. Thousands of billions he had in stocks and cash. He loaned some paintings to the restaurants so they could be more prestigious, on 1% of the book value yearly. Hundreds of paintings of his were hung on the walls of the restaurants. The paintings had enormous value. He still had thousands of it in stock. He spent lots of time inside the labyrinth. He talked to the Marshal of the NPF and the President. They agreed that the Order will take over the NPF. By now he had enough soldiers to do the hunting and the protection of the wildlife. With this the Order acquired everything the NPF ever amassed.

Helicopters, airplanes, 4 WDs, cities, or rather the buildings of it, the Order took over everything. The hunters and whoever wanted to stay became members of the Order, but not knights of course. Their knowledge was necessary. It was also a good training ground for the applicants. With this he acquired the weapons, and the Order could have and carry weapons legally everywhere. The masters delivered the handguns and ammo for the Order.

- Sir, the engineers have been playing a little, they like the machines. So they have come up with a beautiful toy. It is an airplane, but can take off and land without an airstrip. Like a helicopter, but can do 5 Mach. It can land right here, in this yard and can take off from here. They have 4 of them. It is ready, working fine, and now they want to destroy them, because it is made of titanium, and the research is ready and they want the titanium back, and some molybdenum, rhenium and hell knows what else too.

- The Major knows about it?

- Yes, Sir. It would be a shame to let them have their way. Here is the phone, Sir.

- Major, please, call up the engineers of the Harriers. Those new airplanes, yes. Ask them, how much of what they want, and they will have it. I also pay for their work. I want the Harriers. 8 knights will be on the way today to learn flying them. The engineers and workers will be rewarded generously. OK, you can go. Fly them, bring them home. You are a good politician, Duke. Dismissed.

He delivered 200 tons of titanium and other metals to the storage in 5 nights. He distributed yearly salaries to the engineers, technicians, and ordered 8 more Harriers to be made. Can be bigger, better, money is no problem, only the quality matters. He wanted all of the Harriers with machine guns and rockets. With the take-over of the NPF the Order acquired their logistics as well. Again, he sent a reminder to the Marshal that the new organization needed a Colonel as the head of logistics. The Major was promoted to Colonel. Not bad, and she has acquired a staff of her own.

The Castle needed some addition to it. He called the architects together, and wanted a skyscraper just as it was long ago, similar style, and similar arrangement of the apartments. He wanted the upper level as one big suite of his own. It was his land, so he could build whatever he wanted. 80 levels looked fine on the computer; it was nicely fit into the view of the city. Finally they decided to build it 100 stories high with four other towers beside; it looked even better. Needed a little more space, but the machines can make it. They started the planning, and in a year or so it will be ready. Good. I was time for another visit to the doctors. He was examined thoroughly and everything was as it should be; no problems. The nurse had a short cloak on her, and he had an idea what he was thinking about whenever he saw a naked girl, and he saw a lot of them all the time. But now, he wanted to put an end to his doubts.

- May I ask you to drop your clothes, my dear? You are so sweet, thank you. Excellent body you have. I will ask you to turn a little to the side. Yes, I think I have it. What do you see there, doctor?

- I see a naked girl of 18, Sir. A very nicely shaped body I can see.

- When you looking at a girl like her and you look first, which part of her you glance at?

- The middle of course. To be exact I look at the pussy. That is a magical place, a magnet for the eye; she attracts the first and main attention. Tits and ass come after the pussy.
- It is true. That little place directed history time after time, and history and politics and the treasures of ages would have no meaning and would have no importance without that little part. You are looking at the ontological base of the desire; it is the most important thing in the whole life. Nothing compares with it in value or desire. The female orgasm means the surety of her becoming pregnant, because then the mouth of the uterus starts moving, sucking up the sperm, well, in the old times it did, but the pleasure comes from the same reason today. A bodily function translates in the brain as orgasm, even squirting. So a girl has much higher chance to get pregnant if she has orgasm, and the order of nature is multiply the genes, so nature has found a very good way to make it a pleasure in the brain. The pussy is everything.
- I have to agree with you. Life would have no meaning without that beautiful tasty pussy.
- Would you say she has an excellently shaped, perfect treasure?
- I would. But you have to understand: we all have more or less the same. The wonder to look at her is the same nonetheless. Everybody takes the first look at that part, every time it is the same pleasure. Even if we are all the same, a new person is always new, and we look at her and her pussy as the object of desire, the beauty doesn't need ugliness to be manifested.
- I think we could make her pussy more pronounced. Do you have some silicone? And we need a syringe too. Now, my dear, are you ready for an experiment? I pay you for this pain a lot. Doctor, inject some silicone here, to make it more bulging here... Excellent. Now, take a look. You too, dear, look at your treasure if you like it like that. Touch her, feels better, no?
- It is much sexier like this. Too bad the silicone will go away soon. But yes, she is wonderful now, feels great to touch. Something different, something more lustful she turned out to be.
- I am going for a walk like this. Come with me, Sir. Let's see the reaction... Oh my God. Everybody is looking at the indisputably most precious marvel of the world. They forget everything else, look at them. My pussy is the centre of everybody's attention. It makes me so happy. I love my treasure; so bulging, so good to touch, bulky and more youngish-like.
- Yes, younger girls have proportionately larger pussy. We will have some final solution in place of the silicone. I have couple of factories, chemists, so we will have a new material for the injection. You two are working for me now. We have created a new fever for the people.

The chemists had the perfect chemical, totally safe, and good for 5 years. It was his, but not patented. He opened franchise beauty-salons everywhere; they have done the injections professionally, and the size could be decided by the customers. It costs about the price of half



gram of gold, and the profit is about 20%. Beside the pussy tune-up the salons came up with a new thing, the tattoo. If everybody is the same, then they might want some unique mark on their body. He was right again. The business was thriving. The franchises prospered all over the world. Nobody wanted to be left with the original pussy, because desire, desire and desire, which is the key to move society ahead. The mother of all desires was the pussy, not only in this age, but in every age of the history. He re-

membered when he went to a nudist place with his girlfriend very long ago as a youngster. That girl was hetero, never had sex with girls, but he noticed that she couldn't take her eyes off the naked girls; she looked at the pussy first, and it was the same with the other girls also. He could follow their eyes. The girls always loved to get naked in front of each other, and slept beside each other naked, caressed and hugged when nobody was watching. One girlfriend of him said once: her girlfriend slept over in her place; there were two beds, but they slept in one, because they showered together, didn't want to be lonely, and no, they didn't have sex, no way, only kissing, caressing and mutual masturbation, because they got aroused, so no big deal, had to cool down. Yeah, they tasted each other pussy too, out of curiosity, that wasn't bad. Why, it taste so good, and had to know the difference between the taste of my pussy and her pussy; we are good friends. Besides, you do the same to me, so why couldn't she, or I for her? And they were the admittedly hetero girls. The bisexual girls and those who just called themselves curious, which was at least half the girls, probably all, went to nudist places to gaze at pussies, asses and tits. They always preferred girls for sex in the first place. So in a society like this one, lesbian by definition, but different from the old-style lesbians, the view of the naked girl and her treasure was esteemed very high. Let them be happy. They are the same all right, but every one of them was the other from the standpoint of any individual, just like in ancient times. The game of conquering and being desirable was on today too. It is a beautiful game, the best there is; telling the truth it's the only game out there. Everything else comes after that capturing others and having sex with them. Economy must serve this end.

- Dear, what do you think? Look at us. Your dear wives have new pussy. And we're going to try it on you.
- Beautiful. I am happy to make everybody happy. The girls' treasure is the most important thing. Have to cherish and make beautiful.
- Let's see. About 1 billion people will have the new form, the profit is 20%, so it is like selling fifth of a billion grams of gold every 5 years. Selling 200 tons of gold without giving up the gold, I would say it is a brilliant idea. We have our little thing made especially bulging. So it isn't that flat as before. Now, have us...
- It was good. I just cannot take my hands away from my little one. She feels so good, so big. By the way, the Council will have a session next week. You are a full member legally, so I think you supposed to be there. They are little afraid of the things you've invented lately.
- OK. I will explain. It is an exquisite little tattoo on your behind. Lovely. I have a plan. Yeah, Custer had one long ago which didn't work out well, so we talk it over, Colonel. The Duke will have a part in it, so she should be here too. Tomorrow we'll have some good old-fashioned my-way high politics conspiracy to discuss, remnant of the old age. I feel so good.
- And I have a strange feeling I will have a place in history. I've studied your political carrier, darling. When you start your political game, something changes very quickly, dramatically.

He went to the Council with the Colonel and the Duke. Every Marshal had two adjutants, so he had two adjutants too. The President opened the session, and they were discussing the affairs of the state. The industry has successfully been renewed, and there is no shortage of anything what could obstruct the future inventions to be implemented. The Academy was in

good shape, thanks for the anonym money donations, the scientist could research as they wished. The aristocracy never been happier, the new grade of nobles was a success story; more and more people having been received into the ranks. The Officers' Corps had no problems. The officers having been received to the rank of nobles, the Chief Officers made barons for starter, the Generals made count, they were happy. The Vatican never been more satisfied, the goddesses being protected, and more of the airplanes they could have access to fly them all over the world much more frequently than before, so the revival ceremonies could be done more easily and efficiently. No mob-accident, everything is perfect. The President asked the Generalissimo if he wanted to say something.

- Now that you are asking me, first I would like the Colonel to be promoted to General. She has all the necessary exams taken and passed them. I know, she will be the youngest General, but there is always a youngest. A quick vote would help... Thank you, Marshals. The second problem I have is the mythology. I am sure you all know that our lifetime is set, it is finite, but the mythology is infinite. To be part of it makes your life infinite too. Achilles may never have walked on the face of the Earth, or maybe there was someone like him, the point is, he is living forever, because he is part of the mythology. So is Odysseus, Paris, Helene, and so on. One day the Sun will stop shining, and we all will be dead. It is perfectly useless to try to find another planet, because even if we could, it will be dead too one day. The whole Universe will collapse into one. That is a sad story to tell, but that is the unavoidable we have to accept. Compared with that sad end, there are no problems today or tomorrow which can come close to the new mythology in importance. But we still have time enough, and you can be a part of it, or you can be out of it. It is your choice. I'm offering you an opportunity.

- Is there a point somewhere, Generalissimo? We all are aware of the finite time we have.

- The mythology is the point. I would like you to become part of it. But you refuse it, so I am asking you to give something to the humanity, and it is within your reach. Actually, you have to do it. As members of this Council you all are servants of humanity and not the other way around. I created this Council, and I know that with the acceptation of the membership you are responsible not only for the present, but humanity as it ought to be forever. Sub specie aeternitatis, to be precise. You are not up to the set standards. Many of your Generals can do your job better, and they are eager to do it and take your place. They are able and willing. The point is, I have the perfect right to arrest you all for betraying humanity, and appoint your next in line to your place, and even the present affairs of the state will be done better. Why? You are directing this Council on the presumption of the present only. The Council supposed to operate on some higher standard. History gives me the right. Now, it is lunchtime. I ask you to read the clause of the Incorporation of the Articles of this Council very carefully, and think about your fitness of carrying the load this Council requires from the members to be in.

The knights came in, bringing lunch and a copy of the Articles. They stayed, in uniforms, armed, around the room. They didn't say a word. The Marshals were numbed. They were reading the document. The Generalissimo went from one to another. He explained the Marshal of the Chamber that without him there would be no reconstruction, their machines would be worse, the working hours longer, and he would be ousted by the people. The Vatican marshal understood that there is no use for her anymore, the goddesses being completely taken

over by the Order. She is only a puppet now, and if the people will know, she is out. She didn't perform the duties of the Judge either. It was done by her Generals. The Chamber of Commerce was totally useless, with no effect on the exchange amongst the people, rather worked as a constraint. The logistics they had was idle, kind of a bureau, and their work could be done more effectively by the Officers' Corps. The Marshal of the Academy knew she is outdated, and the research today is almost completely financed by some anonym source, and now she was enlightened who that source was. If he withdrew the money, the research would come to the halt. Besides, the Marshals are all from the brain-size of 1750 cm<sup>3</sup>, and their Generals are from the 1800 cm<sup>3</sup> generation. Overhaul is needed for the benefit of all. He pointed out the fine lines of the document to the President. She took office only because there was a Council, and the Articles of the Council were mandatory for the members, and not the opposite way. The individual cannot decide on the matter of continuous development, which is the base ideology of the Council. The Marshals try to preserve society as it is, although there is always some possibility for development. If and when they cannot see that, they are unfit for the role of the leader. He also told her that she could be the vice president, and she would do the daily jobs, just as she does it now. Or even better if she retired and her Generals would do the daily routine. He offered a large sum to each Marshal if she decided to retire and give up the title of Marshal peacefully. Nobody needs public blame to take.

- I hope you all understand the meaning of the mythology. The hero has to be in absolute power twice. Also you've all read finally the Articles as it should have been read before. Now, that I made myself clear, I am here to claim the Presidency of the Council, and you will ask me to take my lawful place. The other possibility: people will know everything about everything, and you all will be ousted, and the Order is here to protect society from your wrongdoings and from the conservation of the present without the possibility of change.

- We didn't do anything wrong. The society is blooming.

- It is, because of the Generalissimo. Just think about it. He made all this possible. Many people lost his or her life in the struggle long time ago. We owe the people of the past; their life wasn't wasted in vain. The only way to do justice is to make the rank of Generalissimo real and official again, and to ask him to take his place according to the Articles of Corporation. Otherwise he will seize it right now anyway. He will not hurt this society, and he is the only one everybody can be sure about. He is from the outside, so you can be sure he will improve this society. He could have been a dictator in the wrong sense of the concept in the ancient times if he wanted to do so. He could have ruined this society if he wanted to do so. No, he wants the continuity of the development of the humanity to ever higher standards. This Council has to be renewed. The Marshals have stayed long enough to be accustomed with the present situation. New blood has to come to make it function better. We're not asking you to resign now, but make the arraignment for the take-over soon. Well, you can resign even now. We can talk it over tonight in the Castle in unofficial circumstances.

- I ask the members of this Council. Do we understand the issue here? I think the Generalissimo has the perfect right to take the Presidency of the Council. All right. We ask you to take the Presidency, and use the rank of Generalissimo as official again. Against? Nobody. So ordained. I hereby resign.

- Thank you, Marshals. Now I accept the Presidency and the rank of Generalissimo as official and the highest rank in the society anywhere. According to the Articles of this body, the President has the same power as the Council when the Council is not in session. Thank you all. You have just made your place in history and in the mythology. You finally behaved according to the spirit of the Council, the zeitgeist and humanity. The session is adjourned. You are all invited to the Castle tonight. We are not enemies, but servants of mankind. Do not take this act personally. We have to discuss some issues. Good bye, Marshals, see you all tonight. Now, my Duke, you have just witnessed the modern-day 18<sup>th</sup> of Brumaire, if you know what I mean. My dear, we make the party especially nice for them.

He made some especially strong drinks, laced with lots of cocaine. The Marshals were in bad mood at the beginning, but very soon they became talkative and loose. They agreed that their job could be done easily by their Generals. They admitted that they didn't really do anything lately, the Generals being so effective. The Chamber of Commerce was unnecessary, and all knew that before, but they didn't want the change because they thought change isn't good in a society. Now they acknowledged that change is good. They ended up in the Turkish bath, and they agreed that life is better now than it was before the Generalissimo was revived. They were drunk and high, and they all signed their waiver, they resigned from the rank of Marshal and the membership of the Council, so became private citizens. They were all too old, and the younger Generals were eager to take their place. The night ended in good mood with lots of sex. Even the next day there were no phone-calls, no change of minds. They all received a sum they could live on in luxury for the rest of their life.

- They were good administrators, but that is all.
- They weren't smart enough. A good administrator knows that the next in line is eager to succeed. They didn't let the younger, even smarter Generals closer to the power. They supposed to know that their brain was the older type with less rational, about 50cm<sup>3</sup> less than the brain of the Generals. The Great Prince stays as conductor and violin virtuoso, but the title of Great Prince is vacant for now. She is Prince of the highest grade. There are other great musicians who couldn't show their talent, they were overwhelmed and criticized by her. I asked around, my dear. Now she is only one of the many. The art will win big-time with her resignation and loss of power. The engineers are happy with the resignation of their Marshal. He didn't let them unfold their talent, because she didn't even understand them sometimes. And remember the first rule of high politics. Never leave an enemy behind. They have accepted the money, and with it forfeited their right to appeal for ever. The new Council will be my creation, and the members will thank me for it. I will ask around for recommendations. Until then the Generals will do the work. I think the title of Marshal will be reserved only for my deputy. It will be much easier to make changes that way. And how is my dear General doing?
- Well, in the not exactly three years' time after you came back from the ice, a fucked-up Lieutenant with no future became General, Prince, and the wife of the most powerful man. And from poorness I have so much money on me now; I am among the richest people on Earth. I love you, dear. And I love you too, dear.
- I am really happy that my two dear wives are the best friends and lovers too.
- So, when do you start writing the mythology, dear?

- It is not time yet. Mythology has its own laws. I have to do something much greater. Now, what we have here? The Square is filled with naked girls. Life is beautiful again. The horse-riding is fashionable; we need more sports, more competitions. We bring back the championships, maybe the Olympic Games as well; we need the works of the masters, the handmade articles. What becomes of a society where everything is done by robots? It becomes boredom, unless we bring into it contests of many kind. The people don't know what to do with their life. There is no need of soldiery like needed in Sparta. You learn science easy, and that is the rational creative. It won't give pleasure by itself. Only the teleological conqueror gives the real pleasure. Sports, competition, sex, beauty, these things all translate to power and so do give pleasure, and so the rational creative has to be rewarded. The engineers, technicians, masters and scientists have to be rewarded. So we create a new grade in society. They will be called aspirants. Those who will be received into the nobility have to be recognized before, so they will work better. Say a twig or branch of laurel could be their insignia, with one, two and three leaves in silver, gold, and platinum. It will become the laurel in time. At least they spend their money, so the money can be concentrated and well-decidedly put to use in the industry. And they will have the money-worth of precious metals. You can even make 1g up to 10 gram sizes of insignias, dear, for every other rank as well. They will buy it for everyday display or for parties the more expensive ones. It is like money anyway, only the money they give up goes to the advancement of the sciences and technology by smart investment.

- It will be a big order. Tons of metals needed. But of course it will emerge from somewhere and mysteriously appear in my storage. OK. I will design something nice. We could use some gemstones too. I mean I can design insignias for the parties, parades, and it will be much nicer and much more expensive with rubies, sapphires, diamonds, maybe pearls. They will be real nice jewels. OK, honey, I know it will come. This Dish of the Generalissimo was sublime. The people somehow like you better than they liked the old Marshals. You are like an outsider, the highness, the history, the originator of this society, a mystery in living body. The Marshals were somebody from the multitude, humans. The people know you want them to be happy. The luxury liners are almost ready. What's in your mind? Hello, are you here?

- Sorry, a theoretical problem occupies me, but isn't too important. All right, darling, you have things to do, see you, kisses. So, Duke, how are the Harriers flying? The goddesses enjoy it? Of course they do. We have ten old castles under renovation in the neighbourhood of big cities. Also have palaces in the centre of each metropolis. We have 2000 applicants under indoctrination. The Order has already 1000 or so knights. I think we draw a line somewhere. Say about 5000. So make it hard to be received into the ranks. And nobody can be a knight over the age of 30. I mean they have to get out. It should be an organization for youngsters only. So make sure everybody learns something useful in civilian life, and should be useful in the everyday course of the Order as well. We need all kinds of masters and other professionals as well. Keep it young, full of energy, and give everybody a chance to try her luck to get in. Once in the history there was a similar military organization. You could hardly find a member over 30 years. That was the bravest, best fighting force at the time. Well, they perished by the age of 30 in the fighting. The Hungarian Hussars they were. They said whoever survived the age of 30, did so because he wasn't brave enough. It is of course a different situation. The original 270 can stay longer, actually they stay forever. We'll decide that later. OK, Duke, we will drive to the docks, and will take a look at the luxury liners.

The one ship ready was beautiful. It will accommodate about a thousand people in great luxury. The masters have done a very good job. The last journey will be comfortable. They inspected the ship inside and out. Nice cabins, casino, restaurants and shops, everything a luxury liner supposed to have. She can be on the see. The tickets were sold already. OK, he told the captain to get her floating and off she goes on her first trip around the world. The company is established, so can start working. The administration is their problem from now on.

- Duke, I still don't understand the way the goddesses work. Can we see it in practice?  
- Of course, Sir. I take you to their workplace. What they do is, they give the patient a last great orgasm, and when that one is finished, they have to die, because their brain is damaged, or something. But that is what they are there for anyway, so as soon as they feel this oneness with the Universe, as they call it nicely, they get the injection and death immediately... Here we are, Sir.



There were many rooms, and they watched in one room three goddesses of the resurrection, working without clothes, on three patients with great care. They put some electrodes to the head, and they stimulated the naked patient on the usual places of her body with vibrator, and they stimulated the brain with current, so the patients started to have great convulsions, their whole body in ecstasy and writhing, and at once some grandiose ecstatic orgasm they had, everybody could see that squirming, not the usual, but for a whole minute or so, and then they were calm again, and the injection came, and they went to sleep. After the death the patients still in the bed were moved into an elevator. They will be cremated here in the basement. The logistic sent a message to the doctors in the clinic, and they started three new lives. So a new life could be created after an old one has been ended. Basically, yes, it was a rebirth with new memory. The genome was the same, in this world everybody is like twins. The whole process has taken up about half an hour and the patients waiting; the goddesses were busy and they really did a great job and a great service for the humanity.

- OK, Duke, it was a great spectacle. My milk-headed Marshal really has done it. It is the perfection itself. They must have researched a lot to develop that final great orgasm. I have seen lots of them, but nowhere near this one. The goddesses really do know their trade. Is that really destroys the brain? They tried it on you yet?

- Let's say, we get very similar treatments daily, but without the electrodes of course. It is great pleasure just to see them naked. I mean they are designed to cause orgasm just by looking at them. No wonder we have ten times over the applicants we actually receive even for training. But the goddesses don't really like to be outsiders. They want to become parts of the society. They want to go to parties, to enjoy life, not to be locked down somewhere in any

kind of luxury. They see and cause death every day, so they want to enjoy the normal life, be part of society for which benefit they are causing the death.

- So take them to parties. I am sure they will be received happily anywhere. Love them; make a pair with them, like your spouses. Their glory won't be hurt, and the people won't be like a mob if they see them more often. But it is your privilege to have them. They do not live so long I heard, maybe 70-80 years.

- All right, Sir. We will. Yes, their genome isn't like ours. Over 60 they start to look older. Their number is set at 10 thousand. There are 2 billion people alive, so for every year we have 20 million new, and so the goddesses' 200 working days yearly means 100 thousand a day go to sleep, if everybody goes according to the statistics, it means every one of the goddesses have 10 people to work on a working day. So it is very hard. Have you seen their body? Beautiful narrow waist, maybe 40-45 cm, their tits about 85, and their hips is about 75. Their height is 160 cm, ours is 175. The perfection, they are. OK, Sir, we are home.

- Love them; take them to a ride, horse-riding, parties, and restaurants. You all have enough money, don't worry about it, it is replenished on you continuously. Now I alone have the right and the power to see anybody's chip, how much money she has, and I can give and take. Poor little things don't have a chip, so they don't have money either. Free them, and they'll respond you with love. 10 thousand, you say? Well, then maybe, just maybe we can enlarge the Order up to that number in time. Yes, it can be done. More cities all over the world are eager to have you. We make an organization for youngsters up to 16 only maybe. Like an anteroom for the Order.

- Thank you, Sir, I will give the orders. Leave the problems of the Order for us. We make it flawless. You have more important things to do. I mean if I may suggest, Sir.

- You are really fit to command, Earl. You can very politely tell me to get a hell out of your business. I think you can have the title of Grand Master in short time. We'll see. All right.

He really had a feeling that something somewhere is not perfect. He was thinking it over. The people had the right to work and do business, to buy stocks and whatever they wanted. There was no pension; nothing was free, because the insurance was the biggest fraud if there ever had one. At his time they began to cut back the responsibilities of the state, and the individual took over the governing of his or her own life. His daughters finished the work, and the people were freed from the last of bureaucracy and the oppression from the state. Now it would be a very stupid question to ask somebody if she wanted pension. She wouldn't know what pension is. Everybody works and everybody makes more money than necessary for the everyday life, so the individual buys stock, gold, or invest in children, so to have something if she is unable to work, or don't want to work more. But here everybody is able to work; here are no old people in the sense they had long ago in his time. The doctors are unnecessary as they were necessary in ancient history, because the perfect genome means no sickness of the inherited kind and more resistance to the usual ones. But even if someone is sick or have an accident she can have credit if she doesn't have enough money to pay the doctor. So what was the question? What can go wrong in the perfect society? He was a revolutionary, so he knew that to instigate an insurrection is no big deal in a society. But it needs a pretext, a reason, and it no need to be validated; it is enough if the people feel that something is wrong with the society, and the reason given is a pretext only for the insurrection. Society is a multi-

layered conservative system, so the conservation of wrongdoings once will make the parameters go out of order, and then a new conservative society will be erected after a revolution. So we never would have discarded the possibility of revolutions if we didn't institute a permanent revolution. It might be strange for a liberal democrat or for a complete idiot, all the same but the smart ones recognized the necessity of a permanent revolution, which is called evolution in this case. We had to keep the society in movement, so it couldn't ever become conservative in the wrong sense. Conservation means a step backward. OK. But how could this society turned into turmoil? He couldn't see it. It was good, and it was bad. Just because you are unable to see something, won't mean it doesn't exist; could mean you aren't smart enough. But if he couldn't see it, then others cannot see it either, and that is good. Or maybe it is so perfect that there is no way to induce a revolution now. Anyhow, many won't understand the problem even, but the problem could be there somewhere, and one day manifested if not discovered in time.

- Dear, won't we go somewhere this night? I want to forget many thoughts, so the Casino would be the perfect place. It has just opened last week.
- I always wanted to try my luck. The three richest people can afford to lose some money.
- Not really, dear General. Anything we lose we lose it to us. The Casino is ours. Well, the Generalissimo is the owner. He made it for the high and low society as a permanent meeting place. No dress-code, nobody makes up rules, everyone is welcomed.
- It is marvellous, darlings. OK, I put some clothes on and off we go. I drive...
- It really is grandiose. Those machines and those tables, and the saloons, I like it.
- I play some craps. We buy chips first. Come, I show you the king of the plays. Just put chips on the pass line for starter. Look at the Duke and the Earls and the other knights with the goddesses. Finally they are taken care of. Anyway, dealer, 1280 across, and working on the come-out. Permanent 200 bet on Don't come. I bet 500 on Don't pass.
- The Don't side. You are playing against the lady with you, Sir. Give me the naturals, dealer.
- Very good, young lady, very daring. Here came your 11. You won. You know that one day I met a very daring young girl in the Casino, and she became the statue in the Square? There I asked her two questions and she became my adjutant. 4. Take 4 place bet down and press 5.
- High – low – yo. 12. I won again. And what was the question, Sir? Do not ask me, because I don't want to cheat on you. I know the question. It is in the books of history. Too bad nobody reads those books carefully. 9. Don't press the 6. Not a good idea. Give me the hard ways, dealer. 8, pair of fours. We both won. Nobody understands this game, Sir. Not even in this Age of Enlightenment. Well, it is new now, so they will, very quickly. And do you have any idea how many reads Shakespeare? Well, almost nobody. The theatres are playing only modern plays. They wouldn't understand the old plays. Fortunately, I say. 5. You won big time. Dealer, give the place bets back to the Generalissimo, because he is about to lose otherwise if you agree, Sir. 7. You are very fortunate, Sir. You don't want to ask me a question? I am poor and the lover of that age you call the Heroic Age of revolutions of your time, but no money can be had with that love alone nowadays, sorry to say.
- OK. Tell me, how would you start an uprising today? A revolution if you like. I have this thousand now for you to come up with the answer. No trick. I do not know the answer. Are you saying you love history? Maybe you could make some order in the archive of the Castle.

- It would be my dream job, Sir. But I have to come up with an answer first. How much time do I have? It is not an easy problem like the watch or the triangles. Would you be so kind to let me take a look at the historical rooms? I would work in the archives for nothing.

- Come up tomorrow. Duke, this young lady will visit me tomorrow. You know the security reason. The Duke has to know, the knights have to know. I will have some chat with the High Society now. Shakespeare, you said. I think some of his dramas could be played today. Not a bad idea. The people of today supposed to know where they are coming from historically.

- Ah, Generalissimo, this Casino is a perfect place. Now we have a talent-contest in one saloon, a meeting in another, the engineers and the musicians can converse in perfect harmony. Those private parties are just for some selected people, and end soon. Here this place never closes. Officers come here, and artists to exhibit their works, and they can do it. I mean nobody tells them they cannot. Snooker contest, arm-wrestling, poker, many things' going on.

- That was the general idea, Prince. I opened Casinos in the fifteen largest metropolises of the world. And the Casino pays true odds. So if someone loses, it is the chance she takes, true chance. Besides, it's an excellent place to date and spend time just for the pleasure of it.

- Well, dear, the Casino makes money anyway, because the player runs out of money, the Casino never runs out of money, and the true odds are true for the infinite playing time. But nobody is ordered to play, so it is OK. A little excitement is necessary in life. We are having great time here.

- It is a cavalcade of everything. Poets read their verses there. Mathematicians have a contest there. Singers sing in another salon. You were right again. Great place it is, a great locale. You can choose aspirants here too. Look at that girl. She is a body-builder. Marvellous muscles she has. Well, congratulations, my dear. The goddesses are enjoying it too. This place has a charisma of its own. It brings society together. You put many little sensual half-rooms for sex with all kinds of toys and beds. One can refresh here, no need to go home. Even the nudism is permitted here, unlike in the private parties. Why am I not sleepy? It is 2 AM.

- We blend a little oxygen into the air, only 1 or two per cent more than in the normal air. It keeps you awake, your brain works better, and you are not sleepy. But it is very tricky. As soon as you go outside, you will be tired. So it is better if we go soon. This was the trick of the casinos in Las Vegas. That city doesn't exist anymore, but it was the capital of the gambling industry in my time. The idiots built a city in the middle of the desert. It is old history. The laws of the state were more important than the laws of nature and common sense. Typical failure of that stupid age, it was. That body-builder is really amazing. She is a naked beauty of muscles in full display, and has many admirers. So it is time to open more GYMs, and let her run one. Contests of body-building, isn't a bad idea. I'll talk to her now, excuse me.

Next day the player from the Casino came to visit him. He showed her the historical rooms, the logistics, the military rooms, and his office. She was amazed. Everything was in the same disorder as he found it. He knew what happened, and he had other things to do during these years. She said she couldn't come up with an answer for the revolution, but because of the same genome everyone has, it could be done only by the geographical separation, or to be exact, the cohesion by the geographical location can make some isolated places want to become independent. Some new kind of nationalism could be developed in time. So the prevention would be to change the officers around the world regularly.

- But the genome received anywhere in the world is made here only, in Byzantium. They are unable to make babies if we cut down the supply. Moreover, the money they have on the chip can be taken off, so everybody will be without money. That can be dodged by local money.

- I didn't say it will happen. I said that is the only possibility. And when was that in the history of revolutions that the revolutionaries were thinking far enough ahead? All they ever cared about was to seize the power. That is the first thing in politics. What did they do with the power? They had found out well after their revolution that something rational creative supposed to be done with the power they have seized. They didn't have that rational. Most of the time they just gave the power back. The French Revolution, for example. The Oath of the Tennis-court was an empty display of the want of the destroying of the power in existence at that time. When they came to power, they killed off each other, and we know the rest of the story. Russia was in the same situation. The Bolsheviks didn't know what to do with the power, so they killed many millions and imprisoned much more, searched for inside enemies, which is a clear sign of the ignorance of the true operation of the society. Aristotle said the politics is the practical implementation of the moral. I don't think so. Moral, but which moral he meant? The moral of that day or any given day, or the moral of the sub specie aeternitatis he didn't know about? No, politics has its own laws without mixing the actual moral into it, and moral will change accordingly. I would say a trip to Australia and both Americas won't hurt you, and the officers would be very happy to change places, go somewhere else.

- Yeah, without the Officers' Corps it wouldn't be possible. OK, I wanted to look around the world anyway, to feel out the reactions to the change of power here. Well, if you are eager to do the job of the historian here, I would be more than happy to give it to you. There is the living quarter of my Marshal of the Army of the past, close to the archive rooms; we make it inhabitable for you. Here we are, a great historical quarter you will have. Dear, would you, please help the inspector of the archive to move in to this lodging? She is a submissive, so take care of her, OK? If you want to move in too, it is all right, dear. The inspector will be working a lot. Take care of her, dear. You have no other duties. Thank you, dear.

In about two weeks the Generalissimo and a General of the Officers' Corps (only in Byzantium were Generals, in the rest of the world Colonels directed the local government), the Duke and couple of knights, the inspector and two Princes began the round trip. They flew to Australia, where the reception was very friendly. They talked to the local officers, the aristocracy, and the goddesses stationed there. The Aussies missed the knights, so the Duke ordered a platoon to be stationed in Sydney and another in Melbourne. It was discovered that many officers have come to life in Australia and served there since. What would you say to a change? They were happy to be stationed elsewhere, and it was settled. The Generals will make the orders of the rotation. The local aristocracy also wanted some new air, and that has been settled as well. They went to parties in both cities, the knights were bombarded with applications, and that will be handled by the two platoons already arrived with the Harriers. By that time every platoon had a Harrier and the number of platoons was increased significantly. They will popularise the horse-riding and the sports besides being soldiers of Byzantium. Palaces were given to them together with the goddesses, and the social life will be boosted everywhere. With the new grades more people will be received into the ranks of society.

- It is not a backward part of the word as I thought it would be. I have to say, with the new arrangements it will be just like any other parts of the world. Maybe I will order some ships to be renovated for liners here. You have masters for the task, Colonel?
- But of course, Sir. They will be happy to make money and compete with the Byzantine masters. As for the knights, it was time to station them here, I would say, Sir. And we will be happy to serve in other parts of the world. It becomes too tedious after a while, and boredom is the mother of the mistakes. We are trained not to make mistakes. Repositioning the officers is a very good idea; supposed to be done way before.
- The world is one. So I think I start an airline to relocate people from every parts of the world to somewhere else, and it will be very cheap. The logistics are ordered everywhere to calculate with the change of the population when making plans of anything. I think it will be beneficial for all.

In America they were received the same way, the same arraignments were made, spent a week here and there in different cities; then they flew to South-America with the same results. Knights were stationed in every major city where the goddesses lived and worked. The round-trip finally proved to be advantageous for all. The same culture will be promoted all over the world, no need to worry about secession or disturbances. People want to live their life with challenges, not only live it through. They'll have their challenges. The little Thais loved to be full participants in society, not locked down in some harem as before.

With this business done and organized, there was a new attraction in Byzantium: the towers were ready. The highest was built 100 storeys, the next with 80, others with 60, 40, 30 storeys high, so 5 towers in beautifully ordered combination, all linked together and with a rapid-train, so one could be in Downtown in minutes. Actually there were 3 rapid-trains, starting at different heights, so someone could get in at the 60<sup>th</sup> level or at the 30<sup>th</sup> level or at the ground level. He moved in the 100<sup>th</sup> level flat, which was a great open place with the elevator in the middle, and had different quarters for different activities with different functions. It was perfectly beautiful. The roof was a garden and landing place for a Harrier and for helicopters. The top of every tower was a garden, so the tenants could enjoy nature and have parties. The rent was high, but so was the prestige. The lower levels had smaller flats, just like in the ancient tower. After he moved in, there was nothing much to do. The precious metals were slowly released together with the gemstones, and soon the market was in equilibrium without the change in the prices. He reinvested his money, so it was put back where it came from, keeping economy prospering. Actually some of his many adopted kids did the investment and management of the money.

- Dear, it is a wonderful place. I have one apartment here and the General has one too, just under yours. We need our privacy, but will visit you often. You have here a marvellous collection of treasures, the paintings, the crowns and royal jewels of the past. It is unbelievable. Finally you can work on the book of yours. Business is good. How is the inspector doing in the archive?

- She is very pedant, accurately sorting every piece of documents of the past. I will spend some time there. We have a lot to talk about. The present and the future are taken care of. Now it is time to have a good view of the past. The Generals are capably leading the logistics, the Lodge is receiving the people in to the new grades, the economy had never been better, and we had never been richer. It was a good idea to adopt those geniuses of mathematics. They are investing our money and stocks whenever it is needed most.

- They have a small staff of our other adopted kids, so everything stays in the family. They have an apartment here full of computers and gadgets, so they are trading 24 hours a day. That is their major stimulation. A financial centre they've put together. Go, visit them, darling. They would love it.

- OK, maybe we can go right now. It is our money they play with, no?

- Come... And here we are. Hello, kids. Please explain to your father the operations.

- Ah, Sir, nice to have you. That monitor shows the total amount you have momentarily.

- I think it is too high. Are you sure?

- Absolutely sure, Sir. That one there is the total amount of money in the world momentarily. Not much difference. So we analyse, differentiate, and we buy and sell stocks, invest in the researches which have future possibilities, and so on. Those computers are doing the work almost without our manual intervention. Good programmes, good software and hardware are the secret. The luxury liners generate some money, also the casinos and the jewellery stores. The hundreds of billions you have in stocks are moved to the best industries. Basically, you could paralyze the economy, but there are safeguards against it. While we are talking now you have just gained another couple of millions. We sell the stocks which come to maturity and buy new ones, we visit the factories, and we follow the weather forecast because of the fields of the agriculture all over the world. We receive the data of the retail stores, restaurants, and wholesalers, the stocks of the factories and the movement of the commodity prices. So that's one reason we needed the whole top floor of the 80 storey tower; the other reason is that we can afford it. We are happy to have our private Harrier, landing just above us. We also exercise, so don't worry about our well-being. We love you, kisses.

- Kiss me, dear, I love you too. Amazingly, you kids have created the financial centre of the world. Well, I will visit you regularly if you don't mind. Keep the purchasing power of the money constant.

- But of course, dad. We know. Riches means nothing if the people aren't richer at the same time. We are not rich because they are poor. We're getting richer together with the multitude. Production of the riches, not the taking away the money from the people is the key. We know. Visit us anytime, Sir, day and night. Somebody is always here. Here we have enough places for everything.

- OK, kids, do what you are happy doing. I love you all.

- Aren't they just lovely? I told you it is the best investment to adopt kids. What happened to those two you adopted first with the General?

- One is a musician, the other is an officer. They are great. Geniuses, they kept their promise.

He went back to his flat where he amassed the greatest treasures. The General came and told him that she has a surprise. She found three fuck-ups somewhere, and she thought they would make him happy. Soon they will arrive, but it wasn't that easy to move them.

- They have agoraphobia. They're afraid of the outside, so they never go out, so your secrets here will be safe. They cannot stand the clothes either, so they will be naked all the time. And, to make it even better, they are nymphomaniacs, so you won't be without the aesthetic pleasures either. But they cook excellent, and take care of you. They are 16. That was the time when the research with the larger brain came to the forefront once again, and the next generations are all right, but these three girls were the first and screwed up somehow. They have the brain-volume of 1850 cm<sup>3</sup>, the very first ones. They are casualties. Very smart kids, but the greatest portion of their extra brain engaged with the pleasure, fucking-machines basically. Later the scientists corrected the mistake for the rational rather. Here they are. Take the blindfold off. Now, my darlings, here is your new home. How do you like it, dear?

- Thank you, General. Sir, we won't disturb you much. Thanks for having us.

- You welcome, girls. Well, the aesthetic is taken care of. There is the quarter for the guests, it is yours, and the pool and bath is there, make yourself a home. The walls are glass, so you can look out, but you cannot be seen from the outside. I won't disturb you much, being at the archive or in the Casino most of the time. But my two darling wives will visit me sometimes.

- We can handle their visit, no problem. And we cook and bake very well.

- Aren't they beautiful? Maybe I stay for a while. Girls, want to try the bath with me? Come.

(- OK, again, we are going too deeply into the unsolicited details. So you took over the Council, which wasn't a Council anymore, only in name, because the next in line persons could do everything better, if they were left alone to create. Your power wasn't questioned because there was no session of the Council. The ships were built and were in operation, the precious metals and stones went out to the market slowly, the industry was renewed and renewed continuously, and they got what they needed. The Order of the Knights and the goddesses were intertwined, and they were received everywhere to the High Society. You revised your age-limit in the Order and it was set for 40 years, high ranks only, excepting the original 270. The economy was running with full steam, and you became ever richer. The towers were rented, and it turned out to be a good investment too. The inspector was doing her job in the archive you called that pile of rubbish, and lived with the fuck-up girl. You had the fortune to receive three nymphs of 16 with too many nerves ending in their clit, so you could enjoy the ontological base of the aesthetic values. We should go to some better topics. We are writing mythology, not a book on the practices of sex. The main thing is, you have come to absolute power the second time, which is important for the mythology. The other things are accidental and particular. So you visited the inspector often and you discussed the past. Now we keep on.

- It was a good briefing. Yes, we discussed the past as it came to light from the documents.)

- First let me present this to you. The article you wrote about the state of affairs before the revolution is superb. For that you've been made Noble gold, one wreath of laurel. And you, my dear, received the rank of Aspirant of the same grade. Here are the signs as my gift. Congratulations to both of you.

- Thank you, Sir. Now I have to take her to the Casino tonight, I believe. I have found out some money appeared mysteriously on my chip, so I've purchased a replica of the old Ferrari. It is a sublime car, Sir, very fast. But to get to the business, the world numbered about 7 or 8 billion people, and this number just cannot be believed today. How on Earth can a leader,

somebody be so irresponsible to let it happen? I found out that there was nobody in charge of this grave problem. The UN supposed to be responsible, but that organization rather multiplied the people by taking from those who worked and created the wealth, and gave it to those who never created anything, except ever more useless lives. The inept idiots created more of their own type and begged and later demanded that the creators of wealth give them food. Now, how can I make the people of today understand this state of affairs? I have a degree in history, but we covered mostly the last 500 years.

- I don't think today it would be understood. In history the understanding is secondary, compared with the facts. Acceptation of the facts is the first step. You can document it; they have to accept it, and then they try to understand. You couldn't comprehend the system even if you lived in that age; nobody cognized it really. It was prohibited to understand. I mean if somebody tried it he was immediately thrown out of the league of learned men. Only idiotic illogical ideas could have been repeated like parrots do. That was a dictatorship of the mind. I tell you an example. In the Second World War allegedly 6 million Jews have died in concentration camps by gassing and other means. Many historians proved that it is untrue. Anybody with an open mind could have refuted it. Building gas chambers and waiting for the people to die in it just doesn't make sense in the first place. A chamber needs 24 hours ventilation after the gassing, but the so-called eye-witnesses said they just went in right after and hauled the corpses without any safety regulations, which is nonsense. Why not just shoot them? No, the Germans were not stupid. Horror-stories what the populace needed and they believed in them just as they believed in Charlemagne and the Dark-Ages. It really was a manufactured lie of that awful race in order to get money from everybody, so they could live on the fat of others forever. The gas-chambers they showed after the war were a laughing-matter. Scientifically wrong; those would kill the Germans as well without insulated doors and so on. Layers made up stories, so no wonder it turned out to be some stupid child-tale. It was a comedy, easily refutable and refuted ably. Many countries had made a law against even questioning the lie of the 6 fucking never been millions. The Jews had so much power that they had this holocaust-story running every day on TV even after 70-80 years of the war, making the new-born generations criminals for some made-up crime nobody actually committed. There was no 6 million dead; there couldn't even be 3 million dead if Hitler killed all the Jews he could have laid his hands on in the territories he occupied. Here is a book, *The Hoax of the Twentieth Century*. 6 years prison for it, just for possession in Germany. But so many were resurrected after the war that one wondered if any of them really have died. They were the very lowest race of mankind. Lying, cheating, stealing, and killing what they did through their history. Their religion was rather the sanctioning of cheating of the other races. They were brought up from childhood in that religion, and it didn't matter if they were religious or not, the cheating and lying was in all of them. I killed them all, and I was never so happy in my life. I got rid of the bloodsuckers of mankind. They supposed to be killed off much earlier. But they didn't only control the money, they poisoned the mind too. They came out with the liberal democratic values, which wasn't liberal and wasn't democratic and had no value at all, except the negative value. This idea of negative was the regnant idea of that time. Those concepts had no meaning at all. They always deployed it when they tried to cover up some wrongdoings in the monetary system. Democracy meant what was good for the Jews, and it didn't matter what it was. Killing the Palestinians, stealing from the states, multiplying the useless to use them

against the white men; democracy was the slogan they never run out of. I have their book somewhere here, the teachings of the rabbis. It is in the original and we have it in English as well. You have never read so many idiotic sentences. It is the pinnacle of human idiocy. It is stupid; it is totally zero, nothing. It is bovine, silly, blunt, and simple-minded; the very worst what the mind is able to generate. That was their Holy Book, the Talmud. What it really was, the teachings of how to steal from, kill and cheat other people. It was a very dangerous race. They had to be killed, every fucking one of them, because that what they all deserved. They turned their religion to certify and confirm the stealing and cheating; or rather the other way around. They created a religion to sanctify the stealing, killing, lying and more. The chosen people, yeah, finally I've chosen to exterminate those chosen ones.

- OK, Sir, don't be upset about the bed-bugs. They are history, all eliminated. The Prime Minister of Hungary before your time was some half gipsy, half something stupid little creature of the Jews. He was a complete idiot as I read the documents. Also his chief of police was a criminal, a Mafioso if there ever been one. The whole bunch of that so called leaders of the country was a collection of puppets and zombies. They couldn't understand a word you put on paper, didn't read it, and it would be useless anyway, because the real leaders behind the throne were in Jerusalem. They multiplied the gypsies, they held the economy at very low level, they stole everything could have been stolen, together with the left-wingers. The people were basically stupid, brainwashed, and they let the bosses to do the stealing, so it wasn't a brave nation at all. They were afraid of the police, who was in the hand of the Mafiosi, and they, the police was a bunch of idiots too. They swore in to protect the people from the leaders they had and served. How was it really? I'm detecting here some antagonism.

- They were happy to have some money, salary to live on. They didn't think; they were mercenaries only, not real thinking and acting men. A real man, a soldier carrying weapon should have killed the so called leaders first. They were shit, cowards. Just imagine how low level of standards the world sunk then. The USA elected a monkey, a nigger for president, not once but twice. A black monkey, supposed to be given a basket-ball and banana, and everybody with clear mind laughed when he spoke. The Jews laughed because this president was their creation, the real thinkers laughed because this nigger was saying absurdities whenever he opened his mouth. Fortunately I had to deal with a better white president who remained in the White House for life, fucking his brain out with his beautiful young wife and girls she had. They even considered electing a woman, some Hillary of very low IQ. They decided the monkey is better. He made my work easier. America was so low intellectually, it couldn't go any lower. But whatever these learned men created in ideology started to fall apart as soon as somebody just touched this edifice of the human foolishness with rationale. A lie is a lie, and Hitler was right and wrong, because he once said that a lie, if repeated many times, becomes truth. He was talking about the lies of the Jews of his time. Later they turned it against him. No; the lie remains a lie for a thinker, and only the brainwashed takes it as truth. In your article you are right that the UN was a bureaucracy like a cancer, a guilty organization, doing very bad things under the premises of doing good things. With the feeding niggers in Ethiopia and elsewhere, who shouldn't be born anyway in the first place, the UN committed a crime against humanity. They always elected presidents of the UN from the average, the lowly, and the other races with no value. By the way, I talked to the rector of the University, and you'll get a chair in the Department of History. So you can teach. OK. I had enough for today.

- Very well, Sir, I take my dear to the Casino to show off the new insignia and my Ferrari.
- Have a good time. This flat is bigger than it was. You have done a great job. It is much more comfortable now. I'm thinking about going to the Casino, too. It is a great place to make friends and talk to people. By the way, this necklace and other goodies are for you, my dear. And for you, because it would be really treasured only by you, I give you a ring. Here it is. This was the ring of the Popes, the real one. Only you can appreciate it nowadays really. Just don't make me kiss it. Inspector, if you are so fond of the old dramas, I can open a theatre, a small one inside the Casino to start with and you could hire or recruit some actors and direct some plays you think worthy for presentation today. You will have a special audience for sure, but who knows, maybe many more will go there. I mean you have to do something else besides this archive for a change sometimes. See the manager, she shows you the place.
- Well, thank you, Sir, I will just do that; one more good reason to go to the Casino.

Home, sweet home. The three nubile were doing their acrobatics. He just sat down and wondered at the spectacle. Real acrobats, artist they are. Jumping and standing on hand, gymnastics of the highest standard. Then exercises of strength, then soon the whole gymnastics went to more and more to the direction of sexual exhibition, finally it became pure lust and sexual orgy on the level of art. They all came like volcanos, squirting. That was beautiful too.

- Did you like it? We love artistic sex very much. Here, lick my fingers. Taste good, isn't it?
- Very much so, darlings. You are real artists. You ought to record and broadcast it. Many would enjoy viewing of the art of sexual acrobatics and the art of lust. Well, you have your big bed, do you need something? The kitchen sends up whatever you need. Clothes maybe?
- We cannot stand that. We like freedom, and the freedom of choice. What are those items?
- Crowns of the old kings. It represented the power given by God. This one here is the English crown, that one is the Hungarian, and many others. The idea was that the political power is one and indivisible, and they had it right. The power represents in reality the free energy of the society, but of course they didn't know the concept, nonetheless they were aware of something that keeps society together. It is a big puzzle, the existence of society instead of the existence of the individuals; you cannot come to this concept by pure logic only. They called it the wish of God, or the order of God. We know that it is supposed to be three different systems put together, but they couldn't analyse it as systems, because they didn't know what the concept of the system means. But again, to repeat myself, they were right in the indivisibility. It was later, when this power was divided amongst the people, and by the act of election they gave this partial power to some chosen one, and in him the power was united again. That wasn't a bad idea originally, and at that time it could be ably defended even by some not too logical philosophy or rather hypothesis. The problem came later. They included the whole of the population in the sharing of power, so the people elected stupid and very average minds, and the power was united in the hands of average minded politicians who were completely unsuited for that role. At least the kings had their advisers chosen from the smartest, but these democratically elected sexy-boys didn't want smart people around them, they used the power for conquering, not for real problem-solving, because they didn't know better, so society went down the drain. I killed them all, and here is the perfection. That is the brief story. I think I was right by sending those idiots to hell. What do you think?

- Well, we are agoraphobic and nymphomaniacs and we can't stand clothes, but we are not stupid. So you can talk to us like you would talk to a smart one. What did the kings do wrong that those dilettantes and the populace could take the power from them?

- The kings at the end concentrated the power, and that was their mistake. Absolutism it was called. Before that, during the Middle-Ages the nobles defended the institutions, because they had the power to do so. After taking this power away from them by the king, it was enough to cut the one and only head, the king's, to end the monarchy. There were no real nobles to defend the institution. That mistake had cost a lot. That is the reason we make the base of this society very strong, so everybody's involved in defending it. That is my work now; to widen that populace engaged in it. A new age of the knights is forming.

- OK, understood. We are going to the bath. You want to come with us? Don't be shy; we want to see your body... That is better. It is very interesting, like our sex-toy. Now we can play with the real deal. Are you going to the Casino? OK, we give you a massage now... Are you feeling well? The least we can do for you. Can we ask you something? That dust of happiness they distribute at Constantine-Day is very good. Can you get us some? It won't hurt us, we are the new generation, it just makes us so happy, and being inside all the time isn't too wonderful state to be in. Well, our wonderfully screwed up over-sensitive clit makes us happy, but a little dust would cause us feel better still.

- I can, I will. It makes me happy see you happy. Just give me half an hour, and you'll have it.

- And we make you the best cake and confectionery anywhere for you. We are great cookie-makers besides love-makers and artists.

He went to the labyrinth and grabbed a kilo of coke. Also pocketed some jewellery, there were still too many sacks full of it. Some of it he has sorted out already, but it was a task looked like he could never finish. He knew where it came from. In the wars the agents of Felix went in to the plagued territories before the occupation forces and removed the jewellery from the dead and they collected the stock of the stores and they confiscated what the soldiers have taken for themselves. Anyway, the jewellery of 5 billion dead and the stores' stocks in thousands of cities amounted to a very nice sum, and most of it was here. He gave the girls some coke, and he went to the Casino. There the contest of singers, the argument about some scientific theory, the poets, and the hell knows what else were going on day and night. There was the poker-room, already filled up. He just wanted some company. He was uneasy after the discussion of those vermin, the Jews. They made him upset even now.

- Generalissimo, we are discussing the history of philosophy. Who do you consider greatest?

- I wouldn't say. There were many great ones. My personal choice would be Spinoza, Schelling, Kant, Fichte, but probably I am mistaken. As you know, I missed out 500 years and forgot to catch up with the literature and philosophy.

- During that time you didn't miss out on any of them. OK, the Marshal who established the present religion was a great thinker. The founders of the old religions were great too, but she really did an excellent job. The Christianity had its resurrection too, but they pushed it too far away in time, so it wasn't perfect. The Muslims had their Paradise too. What we have now is the perfection. Until the discovery of the artificial genome there couldn't be perfection.

- Besides, the Christianity was an answer to Judaism and concentrated on the failures of the latter, so made a mistake by pushing the individualism too hard, but they had to get the support or endorsement of the freemen, the early age knights. For this reason Christianity had to be altered for the Franks and Germans, so it became different from the original version.

- In the beginning, maybe it had to be altered. But later the inferior men, the priests, tried to combine, to merge the two sides and Christianity became totally meaningless under the presumption of the living God. A theory first always comes to existence as an answer to something else. The Judaism pushed the importance of the group too far. Everybody was part of the group, and nobody could go to God as an individual on his own. What was the promise made to Abraham? That is the base of Judaism. I will multiply your seed, God said. That was a correct promise. God didn't promise personal well-being, treasure or some other things first, not even resurrection, but he promised the only thing could have been promised by nature, namely the multiplication of the genes. Here the Jews understood the first order of nature, and they lived accordingly. But they had totally erased individualism from the theory. Only the group, always the group and nothing but the group could have had salvation, and they were permitted to kill, cheat and lie for that end, which they did all the time. I personally think they just wanted to justify their cheatings by the religion, which they had created later for that end. Jesus preferred the individualism, and the salvation meant the salvation from the power and repression of the group. No other salvation is possible, and no other theory about some salvation makes any sense. The Jews of course wanted a Messiah who would have elevated the Jews as a group over the other people, so they had to kill Jesus. In Christianity anybody as an individual could go to God and become a person without being a member of a group. The knights were the perfect symbols of the saved individuals before they received the religion of Jesus, and the beginning of the Middle-Ages was spent in this very nice and happy state of mind. But again, we made the cause the effect and vice versa. They were individuals first, and later became Christians, altering the original Christianity for their culture. So here we have the two sides, and the hatred of the Jews was rather the hatred of the repression of the individual by the group. We can also conclude that not every born Jew was Jewish in reality. So the power of the group or the power of the individual is the main difference between the two. That is the main substance or essence of the two religions. Mohamed deceived the individual and the group, so he didn't really make a separate religion, he just mixed the two. Spinoza called Mohamed a cheater, and he was right as always. Besides, Mohamed never existed, and that mixture wasn't created in that age either. It was the outcome of the old Arianism, which never accepted that Christ and God were the same substance. It was the doing of the Persians, and it served them well during the great conquest, because that's what it was really created for. Dying in battle is the key for getting to Heaven. Was this satisfactory?

- Yes, Sir, it makes everything much clearer. Now we can admire the Marshal even more.

- Sir, how did you come to the realization of the different workings of the mind?

- You can start with anything, with any hypothesis which is not in conflict with the Second Law. After that you have to prove it. Science has proved it. Now, it is common sense. At my time nobody accepted it among the learned fools. They mixed the two workings, and instead of concentrating on the truth and causality, they rather concentrated on their tradition and wanted the approval of their idiocies by other fools like themselves. They wanted to become sexy boys instead of scientists. Those so called philosophers wanted to correlate with each

other, wanted to be the centre of attention, and if they approved my theory they weren't needed in society anymore as intellectuals. They were like little kids, played their little games.

- There will be a new chair in the Department of History. May we hear your lectures as well, Sir? Would be an experience we'll never forget. The living history lectures on history. That's something; twice the master of the world.

- Well, I will think about it. Maybe, but I can't be as enthusiastic as the inspector of the archive, your new professor. Here she is. Take her to your circle. She knows many things, and knows the great game of craps for sure. And she has a magic ring on her. That is some immeasurable value. All right, I'll play some poker now. I played that in my political life for real for extraordinaire bets. I bluffed a lot, but I mostly won the calls.

- Dear, I am happy to see you here again. How are the girls? They are real good girls, darling.

- They are great, I already know that. The Generals are here too, that is nice. No problems anywhere?

- No, darling, everything is perfect. We sorted out the responsibilities, little reorganized the logistics, so don't worry. The horse-racing place opens next week, the swimming pool is open already, the GYMs are ready, and that's the subjects of your concern. Oh, and keep the girls happy. They made me so fucken satisfied, it is unbelievable.

- They massaged me too, the artistic way. Now they are baking some confectionaries. They are real artisans in every pleasure. I love them.

(- OK. We are getting nowhere here again. Small chats won't do. You can't afford the boredom of the readers. They will just throw this book somewhere. Well, the pussy-juice is tasty, but that is for the porno. So let's see. Everything went smoothly again, to use this overused sentence, the girls were supplied with the coke, they returned the favour, the inspector inspected and researched, horseracing, casino, crown, GYMs, what else was there besides?

- Basically not much happened besides. Which is perfect, because the leaders were very capable of handling the problems of the state, the Duke was a talented commander of the Order; the nobles and the aspirants were increasing in numbers, meaning I had to send the soldiers somewhere sometimes, so I could deliver the ever more wanted precious metals to the storage. The first man of the world had to work like a common worker. I just loved to do that. We made the prices to go up a little, little by little, so it was a good investment for everybody. The gemstones were appreciated too, we released them slowly. The kids were happy with the amount of money they played the market with. So nothing happened, and I talked to the inspector a lot. She was a good tutor; I went listening to her lectures in the University, and we talked in the Castle many times.)

- So we were covering the history before you started. The monetary system we didn't cover.

- I explained it many times, wrote a book about it, you really don't want me to go into it again. It is very easy to fathom once someone understands thermodynamics.

- What I care about is the history. I also have to tell you, I record everything we discuss, so the students can see and hear it too. Duties, Sir, think about your duties. Money was perceived as the measure of value, the store of value, and the medium of exchange. It was the approved definition. Everybody copied this, it was taught in the Universities, so it was accepted. What is the problem with this definition?

- It is hanging in the air. There is no system coupled with it. Besides, it is stupid, untrue, and wrong. Every time we construct a definition, we construct a concept, a category. Every concept must have a system we can fit that concept into. The system must be thermodynamically correct. To discover the right system we have to scrutinize the reality as we have it first. Reality as perceived by the brain and the senses is a wild orgy of different things and isn't validated for understanding as such. To make it valid we have to get rid of the sensual frippery. Here the analysing power of the brain comes before us, as it was taught by Descartes. The money is something what measures something, and we have to define, to find that quantity what the money really measures. There is no use to follow the quantitative theory of money, because it says money measures the things money can buy. It says money measures the things that money measures. It is idiotic and never worked in reality either. Another version of this theory says the money measures the total wealth of the society. It is not so, and this theory never proceeded anywhere in the understanding of the essence of money. The commodity theory says that money is a commodity like any other item on the market, so it measures itself basically and mistakes the measured thing with the measure itself, which is nonsense. It never worked in practice either. The free energy is something which cannot be arrived at or thought out by the rational mind alone by pure logic only, meaning it is not an *a priori* concept. You could think and think alone for centuries, and you wouldn't have this concept. It is a scientific concept. The empirical and the rational together are necessary to have this, to substantiate this concept. That is the way science works. To make the monetary system scientific, we have to find the free energy in the system of economy, what money measures. That is the virtual wealth; the wealth which the society is capable of creating without consuming it, or rather the wealth recreated again and again after consumption for the market. It is material and psychological in one and the same time. It represents the sum of goods on the market the people are capable of purchasing but they go without. It is an energy given up; a freely and voluntarily given up sum of goods is the virtual wealth. It also means that the gross quantity of money must be equal to the merchandise not yet purchased on the market, plus the basic materials needed in the factories for production. How much of what items any given society can go without is determined by a material and a psychological factor. How much they can create in the factories is the material factor. What they can go without is the psychological one; the western people always wanted more, so their virtual wealth was higher. So we have a well-defined quantity, the merchandise on the market not yet purchased and the purchased goods not yet consumed. That is the quantity of the virtual wealth. It is connected with the wealth, not with the money. Money comes into the picture later. The well-organized society has to have enough money to buy all merchandise what is on the market, but the people chose to go without, and rather chose to carry money instead, so they can purchase what they want in a later time. They can do it rightfully only if the purchasing power of the money won't change during the time they give up something for the money, and the time they buy something for their money. It is a genuine measure of giving up something, and that is the quantity the thermodynamics named free energy, and the scientific economy named virtual wealth. And to arrive to this conclusion, or rather to create this quantity, needed scientific thinking, and the economy was very far from being scientific. They liked to call their discipline a science, but it surely was not. It was a dismal science. They occupied themselves with creating pieces of papers which brought in interest, they called it many names, but basically all of them were

plain debt. When we arrive to this essence of the economy and to the essence of the money, it is very easy to arrive to the reforms necessary for the money to function right. The money measures the virtual wealth. Everything, what measures something, must be permanent in time, a constant and a standard. The purchasing power of the money must be kept constant in order to be able to function rightfully as money. That is what the idiots called economist forfeited to do. They looked at money as wealth by itself, because of the faulty way it was created, by obtaining and issuing credit. It is not wealth. It is debt. It only represents existent, but given up wealth; the wealth which society is capable of producing without consuming the whole immediately. Money should be issued by the nation, not by the banks, and according to the quantity of goods produced for the market. The constant purchasing power should be maintained, because it is the essence of the money. The banks created money by giving credit unscientifically, completely independent of the quantity of goods produced, and always in the wrong time. The money something like the activation energy, and should be issued accordingly, but the banks issued it like reaction energy, so the timing was always wrong. The esteemed bankers were the enemy of the society. They supposed to loan existing money, which the owners of the money wanted to give up for a long period of time. Instead the banks operated under the *fractional reserve system*, which is a rubbish theory, logically false and the most dangerous thing to do to society. Under this system the banks were criminals; created money by the stroke of a pen, manipulated the economy, made the life of the people miserable, and subjugated the free production of goods under the power of money, exactly the opposite as it should be. Production and the standard of living should be the first concern, and the money should be subjugated to it, being a measure and not the master of the economy. The full reserve should be legislated, so the banks cannot create money by the free will of the banker, what they can do under the fractional reserve system. A bureau should be created like the Bureau of the Weights and Measures, and an *index number* should be established. The monetary value of the merchandise and services needed for a person for one month should be arrived at according to the needs and the standards of living, and this number we call 100. That is a pure number, and the statisticians are able to determine if the present purchasing power of money will change, and they will recommend the change of the quantity of the money before the change actually occurs, so it won't change. Very important to withdraw or issue money *before* the decrease or increase of the purchasing power of the money occurs. The decrease of the purchasing power means inflation and the increase of the prices in general. A given item can change in value, can be cheaper or dearer, but the whole market should be kept constant. Before inflation happens we withdraw money by ad hoc taxation or the sale of state securities and by the detriment of the money so gained by the state. The opposite is called deflation and the decreasing of the price-level. We issue new money by paying the employees of the state with the new money, so the price-level won't increase. We always have to keep the quantity of money synchronized according to the production; the money being the measure, the exact opposite as was the conception of the money as value by itself. Money has no value by itself, only through the goods it can purchase. The deflation has its own problem. The prices won't just go down, but the economy will go down first before the prices. Nobody will sell something cheaper than it had cost him to buy. So the factories close down, because there is artificially not enough money in society to buy the merchandise at the price the factories offer the goods for, calculating on the old prices the base materials had

cost them to buy. The idiot economists never understood the causes of the depressions and crises, and they thought it is something like the weather, out of the human will to do something about it. Overproduction, they called it. Yes, overproduction, compared with the money in existence which they manipulated artificially, but not overproduction by the needs and creative capacity of the society, which should be the only importance. The tale of Joseph can be discovered behind every crisis. There had to come the bad times in order to enslave the people. The origin of the fractional reserve is a frozen history. The government didn't want to create money long time ago, they didn't understand money, and just after Charles II stole or borrowed all the deposited money of the people in the Tower in the XVII century, the banker discovered it is never used fully, but about 10% of it is enough as cash in the pocket of the people. So he thought the remaining 90% can be loaned out. In my age it was 5% only, so 20 times as much credit moneys could be created over and above they actually had, but let's look at the operation on the original 10%, and the English pound money. The owners of that money were using that money paying by checks, which cleared between the banks, so the cash was in the bank, unused as cash-money. When someone has deposited 100£ for interest at the bank, the banker could loan out 90£, and because the loan-money bears interest, it should be spent by the borrower. Whoever received the 90£ from the borrower, (because the credit-money always had to be spent, none borrowed to keep the money in his pocket and pay interest on it, so someone received it for goods and services) deposited it in the bank, so 81£ could be loaned out again on paper by the stroke of the pen. And whoever received that loan, spent it again, and somebody deposited it, so 72£ could be loaned out, and so on. The original 100£ deposited became 1000£ loaned out on paper. The banks received the interest of say 5% after the 1000 £ loaned, which is 50£, and paid the original depositor 3 £. They did not pay for the money deposited into the checking accounts. The real money, which was in the safe of the bank was only 100£, but in circulation it became 1000£ virtual money, but functioning as real money. If everybody want to withdraw his money, only 100£ could have been paid out, so the banks closed whenever there was a rush on the banks. They imagined the money into existence. The virtual wealth is wealth imagined to existence rightfully. The banker imagined to existence the measure of the imagined wealth itself. It is logically very wrong. It's like we imagine gold mined, and we behaved like this non-existent gold existed. It is the same brain-working which created God, the living version of God. The credit money also brings up some legal problems. Whoever gets a loan and invest it to a factory, he buys the commodities on the existent lower price-level. The credit he obtained works like money, no difference whatsoever; so more money circulates without putting consumer goods onto the market, paying wages only which takes out goods but not yet puts any back, and causing inflation. The building of the factory creates something, but not consumer goods, what matters in the purchasing power of money. These small inflations lower the purchasing power of money, everybody's power is lowered, and this general lowering of the purchasing power concentrates at the investments as increment. It means that the investments are everybody's property in some measure, so taking them over communally is justified legally, so the old communists had some truth, even if they couldn't comprehend the real reason of it. The banks don't finance the investments after those factories were built, so the new level of the quantity of money is lowered by the paying back of the credit, and deflation is next, the consumer goods of the factory cannot be sold; there is no money to buy them. When the bubble bursts, there is a

crash. It is always the result and fallacy of the fractional reserve credit-money system. In place of this system, real, government-issued money should have been implemented and the banks must keep not 10% of it, but 100%. Only the money given by the customer to the bank for the purpose of lending it for investment should be loaned out. So the fractional reserve must be eliminated and the money should be issued the way we showed above. Now the depression understood very well, and can be handled according to the new scientific economy. We didn't have depression in the last 500 years, because we have the scientific monetary system, according to the essence of money. The capital redemption is another necessity of course to eliminate another perpetuum mobile of the second type from society. Money borrowed and capital invested is two essentially different kinds of animals. The monetary debt is repaid once, while the investment cannot be repaid; only transferred. The interest paid on monetary debt is for the time allowed for non-repayment until the debt is repaid. The capital causes the lowering of the working-hours on the production of a unit of merchandise which would have been spent if the new agent of production didn't exist, so it is trying to measure the new versus the old types of production. The new factory has to be built; and whatever it cost is the nature of activation energy, while the product is the nature of reaction energy, and we cannot measure the working hours saved and the working hours for the new factory built in this comparison. For this reason the capital always have to be worked in full capacity to gain more saving of working time, or more goods produced in given time, it's the same. So the dividend is really only a reward, a moral factor, and cannot be handled as repayment, surely not as timelessly existing monetary type debt of the society which is a perpetuum mobile of the second type, but have to be handled as amortises together with the agents of production. This way the investment is encouraged; with the tax the state is always a steady buyer for the stocks. People can invest more; the production has no monetary obstacle. Soddy explained it well. What else do you want to hear?

- So you have made enemies the bankers, the state and the lower cast of the humans. Not bad. There had been a great pressure on them not to accept your theory. That is when you gave up the theoretical persuasion of the liberals and the bankers and the state, and you started the practical war on them. I have some articles here about the police finding dead corpses of gypsies on the streets of Budapest almost every morning and in other cities as well. They were all shot in the head as well as in other body-parts. I guess you didn't want to leave witnesses.

- We killed them, as many as we could. With Felix and some other comrades we had some silenced 7.62, and we went hunting. We killed the stupid brown animals, because that's what the gypsies were. They were not humans, not even animals, but pure useless shit, the enemy of mankind. We wanted them to respond, but they were cowards as well. They killed old people, and they were brave when in a large number of their group against a lone white guy, otherwise cowards. Every night we killed them, not only in Budapest, but in other cities as well. We went in to their houses and killed them all. It was beautiful. I loved it. My first killing was in a village. 5 in the family, the later employed old trick I used. I had to do it alone for a while, because the police didn't realize fast enough that it is a racial thing, an act of terror, and the followers didn't know this either. Later it worked like a charm.

- I think it is enough for now. I enjoyed the opening of the horse-racing field.

- Yes, they are noble animals. The knights were riding them, and it was spectacular. By the way, you are made Noble, Platinum, tree laurel wreaths. And you, dear, are Aspirant the same highest grade. Enjoy. I have the insignias made for you, and here they are.

- Well, thank you, Sir. The validity of the perceived things is something we have to cover. You mentioned Descartes. But it was Spinoza who created the Substance, and he said that the individual thing is a modus when we see it from the point of the substance. It is the same as the cultural system.

- Exactly. The individual thing has many attributes, and we never know which one is real if we look at the thing itself. But looking at the thing from the substance, every individual thing becomes modus, meaning they carry the same essence, the essence of the substance. The world can be constructed by a very few laws, ideally one law. That is what Spinoza said, and we constructed the society accordingly. We are modus, members of humanity, and we have duties for the humanity. And we are individuals, and everyone is permitted and encouraged to pursue her individual life according to her own happiness. But we never forget that the two different ways are basically one and the same. By pursuing individual happiness you enrich humanity and doing your duty to society makes you happy. Spinoza didn't know about thermodynamics, but he said the right things nevertheless. He was one of the greatest. Schelling tried to rephrase this in his philosophy, and whoever can read him, understands him accordingly. You have a concept; you find the counterpart concept and arrive at the unification of the two. There you have the essence of the original concepts, or something, like that. Read.

- Sir, let me give you a kiss to make me the highest grade of Aspirant. Please... Thank you, Sir. I am so happy. But please, don't give me any higher rank. It is perfect for me.

- All right, my dear. But let me give you this fine jewellery, which couldn't be displayed in a better place. It was the body-jewellery costume of the Ladies of the Turkish Sultan. Very devious, it has to be worn naked, and rarely covers the exact places it wants to elevate in importance. It makes me happy if you are happy. Here, try it on and have a good time.

- All right, Sir. Now it means Casino, and she will be the main attraction. Next we are going to discuss the private wars you waged on the enemies of mankind. For that I have to collect the documents of the age. It is no small task, very hard to do. There are lots of articles, and I don't know yet which ones are really relevant. So see you next time, Sir.

Something made him uneasy. Here they are the tree nymphs, beautiful. Is the artificial genome the best solution? It depends on the supply, and something happens to the laboratory or the Earth and the genome is no more. What could happen, and how can we defend ourselves? Now, we can do some countermeasures, but no defence against the change of the poles of the magnetic field of the Earth, no defence against a big meteor, but then the ancient people would have been dead also. So what to do? What is the Casino for? So he went there to discuss this matter. Maybe they already have a solution.

- Let us imagine the Earth changes the magnetic poles. We cannot do anything against it, and we are all dead, because the radiation from the Sun can reach us, being no defensive magnetic layer around the Earth. It could last for 500 years, so if we put the laboratories under the earth we're all dead anyway. Now, any ideas to survive something like this?

- We have laboratories underneath. We have enough food there for long time. But no, 500 years would be deadly. An unusual radiation from the Sun, we can handle that. We can handle a meteorite too, having a counter-measure system in place around the Earth, and missiles are in place to launch. A big meteorite, no, we can't handle that one. There are facts we have to accept. We have just so much power and no more. We are humans with limited resources and capability.

- And we cannot waste our resources for something what may never happen. One day the Earth will be covered by the Sun. If we went to another planet, what is the insurance that the new planet won't be covered by its Sun in a short time? Even if not then, once it will be. One day the whole Universe will collapse. So the end is sure and we cannot do a thing about it.

- Yes, it is a sad story, but we have to accept it. We can solve the problems of production, and we can solve the problems of society, but we are too weak to solve the problems of the Universe. So everybody have to accept the facts, and live like it is not within the power of humans to solve it. That is a solution. The absolute and other childish tales are a waste.

- We can make the brain twice as big as today or ten times bigger, well, not in reality, but that brain will say the same things. It can recognize the problem, but also have to realize the necessity of the end too, one way or another. Some problems might be solved by it, but not all.

- What is the biggest size we can go up to?

- I would say about 2 litres. Even that is humongous. It would burn calories like a furnace, which can have a toll on the energy-supply-system of the body, and we all agree that the rational won't be increased largely by increasing the brain. We could do some research, but for that we have to accept the failure too. I would be happy to go to the limit to prove that there is a limit. That is what you want, Generalissimo?

- I don't know. It would be beneficial for all to be sure that we have an optimum size of brain, and we keep the humanity at the optimum. Over that size it is a failure, so the next generations won't make the mistake. We really cannot do much more. We can make the smartest humans possible and let them come up with a solution for the problems can be handled by humans. Now, we can do let's say 2 litre size brains. We also can make those humans asexual if we wanted to, can't we? The question is why we would do such a cruel thing to anybody.

- Yes, we can. The question is valid. If the humans are freed from the need of sexual satisfaction, they can concentrate on rational things to solve. The teleological conqueror will be eliminated, no, rather just depressed. They will face only insoluble causal problems. They'll go mad. Life would have no point for them. Sex is the main thing to live for, not the rational.

- You are right. It won't matter much how smart we will be and if we all will have the causal thinking, we would be able to follow the links of causes, and we will never be able to recognize life itself. If we could follow the causes linked together to the creation of life, it wouldn't be realized as such, because in the causal line there is no breaking point at the life. We recognize life, because we cannot follow the links and each step of the cause, so we apprehend life as a new system, but if we could follow the causes, we would see only the retardation of the entropy in one place, but in the same time this entropy will be increased in another place, so for the hypothetical causal mind it won't become a retarded system as it is for us. Besides, even the greatest brain couldn't follow the links of causes. To make people without sexual urge would not be beneficial for humanity, and would not be beneficial for the individual. To think only in the causal would mean a handicap, a loss. But of course I might be wrong.

- Do you have any idea how much sex a 2 litre sized brain would require? Even today, the new generation with the 1850 cm<sup>3</sup> brain needs about 3 or even 5 orgasm a day. We do it openly all right, no shame attached. It is very good. I just wonder how much sex the larger brain would require. With the rational we must have the emotional attached. And telling the truth, with the increase of the brain the rational didn't increase accordingly. I mean they are smarter on the average, but not much smarter than the 1750 or 1800 cm<sup>3</sup> sized people. And with all due respect, Sir, your 1350 cm<sup>3</sup> sized brain is still very able even today to solve the problems of today as you have proved it in politics lately, fortunately. Well, for the sciences, yes, we need this large brain.

- We can put an end to the hypotheses by making the largest brain-sized people, and we accept the failure if we are over the hill. The asexual will be ousted from society; we know that without trying, so it wouldn't be a good idea even to try. We, the Academy, can go to the limit. If the Generals agree, we can start the research and the production. Your say is, Generals?

- Well, at least we will know our limitations. I agree. Go ahead with it.

- Good to know. I think we already have reached the limit with the 1800 cm<sup>3</sup>, maybe the 1850 but I want my theory proven, so I agree. The question is, how many humans we will make, calculating they may be a loss. I pay for their support if they turn out to be unfit to society.

- The scientific probe requires at least 50. I say we make 50 with 1900 cm<sup>3</sup>, 50 with 1950 cm<sup>3</sup> and 50 with 2 litres. That will put an end to the human problems. The problems of the Universe are staying in the air. That has already been solved, and the solution is a sad negative one. If one would try to solve that only, would be mad after a while, like Boltzmann had.

- Yes. Well, the permission is given. And also have some data and material available about the difference between the 1800 and the 1850 cm<sup>3</sup> sized brains. The General might have a valid point there. Maybe we are already over the hill. We have to have a discussion about the production of the best people. Now the 1850 cm<sup>3</sup> comes to maturity, and there is not much difference in the rational. Well, maybe a little, but they require more sex for compensation.

- Generalissimo, we think the 1800 or 1850 is the optimum. But we must know. The 1850 is more sexed, but a little more rational. The 2 litre, yes, it'll let us know. I am very happy that you are the leader. Just like in the good old times: revolutionary and maker of new things.

- So, we will see the data and we'll discuss the matter. Now, I'll play some poker. 5 card stud. But you discuss the matter, and bring society into the debate, so everybody can have a saying. It is called the distribution of the responsibility in politics. Then we do whatever we want anyway. The people need to feel they have a voice. Let's make them happy in the meantime.

The horses were popular. Many riders were in the parks, he had his coach, and others had theirs as well. It was great to travel on horse-powered coach. The Downtown was covered by many roofs in bad weather, and some heat-radiators were everywhere, so it was good weather inside most of the time. Naturally the horses couldn't be let in. It was fine. He went for another check-up to the doctors. They had good news. They can prolong his lifetime practically infinitely, meaning he didn't have to worry about an abrupt end yet. It really was good news. Now there was nothing to do just wait for the new people to be created and raised. At least we can be sure about the optimum size of the brain in time. Well, the training in and for the Order is very popular. Meaning lots of naked girls doing exercise in the parks, and this usual-

ly ended in mutual sex. Good for them. Cohesion is important. At home the nymphs baked some of their art-pieces. It was delicious. They massaged well, and did their gymnastics perfectly. Life treated him fairly. His two loving and caring wives visited regularly, the money was managed perfectly, he could watch every parts of the world on TV, and so what else is there to do? The archive was the only unfinished business for now.

- Sir, let's cover the private war. It was an act of terrorism those days, and it was punishable by life in prison. What can you say about it?

- It surely was. Against that government and against those bureaucrats everything was permitted in the name of humanity. The state was a criminal organization at the time and those people playing a part in it were criminals. It was a duty of every people to fight those bastards. Too bad the police didn't realize it sooner, so some of them we had to shoot. Acceptable loss it was. They defended the wrong people, so in our eyes they were worse than the gypsies. The gypsy was born inferior and they couldn't do anything against it. But the whites, who defended them or even worse, those whom made babies with them were the very lowest in the line. I remember a girl of us who loved shooting gypsies with us. When she spotted a white girl with a gypsy she became really mad at her, so she shot her in the stomach. It takes about 2 or 3 hours to die after that, and she reminded her that during her death-waiting she can recall all the fuckings she had with that gypsy who was right there, dead. I don't remember what her name was, but she was made Colonel in Felix's organization. Good girl she was. Anyway, first I detonated a bank, but I couldn't tell anybody that it was I, couldn't recruit anyone, so I started the shooting. Beginning that series, wow, it was some task. The population, even the most heroic and bloodthirsty guys on Facebook turned out to be little pussies when it came to do something real and serious. Even to get a gun which I wanted took me a good half year. Everybody and I mean everybody scared out when it came to acting. They always made up some excuse not to do anything. The lack of trust was one problem. So finally by some silly roundabout way I could get a machine-gun with a homemade silencer and I went to the homes of rich gypsies, the usury-guys first. I, myself alone went in, and I had some good story ready about distributing money on behalf of some agency, and I wanted signatures of poor gypsies and divide the money available between us. They let me in, I shot them, asked for the money politely after shooting his wife or child, and so I had enough money for more professional guns and cars. I never left eyewitnesses behind. Then I had followers who knew, and the organization grew and grew. There were some uniformed right-wing idiots who thought they have done their duty wearing the uniform one or two occasions a year publicly; I had nothing to do with them. I wanted fighters or rather revolutionaries. The fighters just want to win a fight, but the revolutionary has no moral limitation; for him the end sanctifies the means; he kills for the cause. Every one of those recruits had to shoot a gypsy in front of me just to get in. The beginning was the hardest. Heroic time it was. Too many minor details happened then, so I just jump to the point. We were large in a year, had enough money, so we could operate even inside the police, because we had members from the police also by that time. Not all of the police were traitors. Later more joined, and we had to try them first, so the reception was to shoot down some unwanted element. They did so, and became members. Some of the soldiers converted into members, and because everybody would have been jailed for life for the acts he committed at the joining ceremony, everybody was very brave to fight

later. The gypsies started to emigrate, the UN wanted sanctions, the EU wanted sanctions, but we had our ears inside the police. To send a good message, we shot and killed the chief of the police, so everybody knew who is in charge in reality. The next in line knew that he is the next if he tries something against us. We had better guns than the police had, and we were not bound by any law like the police was. We grew; the government didn't have too much to say, because we killed everybody who raised voice against us, starting with the journalists, the TV-people, and so on. We had nothing to lose and everything to gain. We concentrated on the armed forces for recruitment, and very soon we had a good number of them. In the meantime I propagated my theory; naturally nobody knew who I really was, or if he did know, he didn't show or say it. The people and the learned philosophers didn't understand a word I was saying, so I gave up on them. No more discussion, practice instead. Felix went to the Jewish quarter in Budapest, and asked for money to support our cause. He killed those who didn't give or not enough. He said he wanted them not to give, so he will have a good reason to shoot them. I personally couldn't understand why anybody needed a special reason to kill a Jew, but it was my view. They were the enemy too, so killing them was natural to me. I will jump in time to the next election. By then we were the undisputed number one force in the country, because we were invisible, could be anywhere, no moral problems, and armed to the teeth. So I called the leaders of the major parties together and told them that we have an unofficial coalition as of now. It doesn't matter who wins, because we, the coalition will appoint me for Prime Minister anyway. Some of them started laughing; Felix shot those on the spot, so nobody was laughing no more. They pissed and shat in their pants, literally. Felix told them that their family will be put to death together with them, and now they believed him, so we had an agreement very quickly. In the election I don't know who had how many votes, but I didn't really care, everything went according to the plan. These people were basically cowards, and they didn't want to fight for a cause they didn't believe in. Nobody really believed in liberal democracy and saving the gypsies. So the President appointed me as a new Prime Minister as he should have done so by law, and after taking my office I went to his office, and told him that I want his seat also. He gave up his seat for the sake of his family. So I became the President too, that way nobody could question my power. The Parliament was dissolved, the new monetary system introduced, and everybody was happy. It was easy at the time I possessed the power. The beginning was the toughest; the weakling is nothing in politics, as soon as you have undisputed power, backed by weapons and fighters, and you use this power wisely, and have the theory in advance, everything goes the way you want it to go.

- OK, Sir, the journalists never wrote much in and about that era. Maybe they were not sure if they will survive the article. There were a good number of them reportedly died.

- More died unreported. We told them to shut up. If they wanted to be sexy boys and wrote some inanity, they dug their own grave. Sexy-boys died fast. We killed them. The TV-boys were almost all Jews. They thought they can say whatever they want; the Mosad or the money-guys will protect them. We killed the Mosad in the country, and we killed the stupid TV-boys and the money-guys as well. The idiotic TV-shows made every normal man go crazy, but the Jews, the owners of the media thought everybody is stupid. I think they were stupid and couldn't create a half-decent TV-show even. Anyhow, when I grabbed the power, I had the dictatorship. The standard of living almost immediately went higher, the joblessness was over, the people were richer, and I made the new monetary system in the country first in the

world. Immediately the other countries wanted to follow me. But it is a different story. You have documents about that. From the beginning to that end it took me about 3 or 4 years. That was the heroic time as we called that period.

- Yes, Sir, thank you Sir, it was very enlightening. The whole population is debating the question of the new research-babies. We never had public debate before. I mean the Council used to be decided, and the people didn't have much to say, except maybe a question or so. They love it now. They love you. They especially will love you when I communicate to them that you jeopardised your life so many times for them in the past. You could have used the power for yourself only, but history clearly shows the opposite. The Casino is open for everybody. That is a new thing, because before it would have been open only for some fragment of the society. The parties are given always for the same rank and grade. Now the nobles are totally in love with you, the aspirants even think you are some God, so do the new barons, the knights and the students for sure. Somehow mysteriously some money appears on the chip of the poorer students, and when someone runs out of money, voila, there she has some. Or tickets for the concerts and the theatre are there mysteriously in their mail. There is only one who can possibly do that. Good man you are, Sir. The rent for the housing of the students is lowered. I could continue the examples, but you know what I am talking about.

- I don't know what you are talking about. Anyway, good things happen all the time. My dear, are you all right? Can I do something for you?

- I am very happy, Sir. I have my own car, people asking us to go to their parties, we go with the inspector, and the Casino is very nice too, we love each other, so everything is just fine.

He visited his kids, and proposed to them to raise the monetary base of the index number. Calculate what would be the consequences, and what would be the best policy. Calculate the raising of the price of gold a little, and the doubling of the quantity of gold and the gemstones on the market in the same time. They understood the problem immediately. In the present situation there is not enough money to adsorb all the precious metals and gemstones without going short on other commodities by the people. There must be enough for all. Solve the problem. And asked for a camera he can record something and it could be broadcasted. Thanks, kids, keep the money growing for the society.

- How are my nymphos? You girls want some clothes and going for a walk on the streets?
- Very funny, rather taste this. It is our new creation. It is very good, right?
- Excellent. It is a piece of art. I've never tasted anything better. You're artists in everything.
- Now we start our exercise. Want to watch? Good, just sit down and enjoy...
- I will, my dears, I most surely will. So will the whole world.

It was another piece of art, and he recorded the whole thing from the beginning to the very end. The TV liked it, so did the whole world. Something was still missing for the writing of the book. Some grandiose monument and he just couldn't figure it out what it supposed to be. The pyramids of the Egyptians were standing still, although the corrosion has done its work on them, and they became less and less, and they will disappear in time. Besides, nothing like the pyramids will suffice now. That was for that age; today it would be useless even to try to build something like that. Nothing survives the elements. The entropy is in progress all the

time. Well, he will think about it. Why is it that every great statesman wanted to build something grandiose anyway? Maybe they felt that their time is over soon and had the urge or rather the expectation that the next generations remember them for long after they are gone. It is the wanting of the timeless rather than the exhibition of the greatness. This is rather an urge of the first system. When we switch from the retardation of the increase of the entropy to the artificially created increase of the potential we arrive at the imagined state of the zero entropy as ideal or limit, the perfection. This is an urge in everyone, and whoever has the resources to materialise this state of perfection does it; not as his private thing, but rather as the exhibition of the greatness of the society he leads. Of course it'd never been idealised as such, but it is a mistake to attribute those gigantic buildings to the exhibitionism of one person alone. Those are somewhat the indicators of the level of entropy of the given society. The Egyptians were great. Every Aryan society was great. Later the mixing of the races had the result of the ever increasing entropy or the decrease of the potential. The idiot prime minister of Hungary had built football stadiums. That is low enough intellect and shows the taste and inferiority of those people. Of course a mixture of the lowliest races cannot produce anything great, and their idea of greatness is the stadiums of non-existent football they had.

- OK, Sir, we still have to cover some history here. You visited the Russians and I have some documents about it. Why were they so important?

- The Russians were close. America was in the grip of the liberal democracy which I fought against. Russia always had the mystery around her, so that country couldn't be understood like others. They wanted to expand, and it didn't matter if they had the communist rule or other rule, I could get to them by offering the empire they always dreamed about. Anyway, expansion is one of the laws of politics universally anyway. So I asked for a map and drew some lines on it, and I said that is how Russia will look like. Very much as it was after they'd become an empire. The President didn't know how to achieve that goal, so I told him I needed an alliance with him, and he will see it in progress. He sent a General to me as liaison officer, and we had an agreement. After I have secured the Russian alliance I could go to the countries in the region to unify our resources and to have the Confederation. It was very hard, very time-consuming to explain those little people what I want. Without the Russians it couldn't have been done. They were the force, I gave the ideology. I don't recall the step by step process, but some heads of state had to be liquidated, others bribed and scared; finally everything was as I decided will be or should be or ought to be. With the power and the right ideology everything goes right sooner or later. The human factor I had to fight against. Those heads of state were narrow-minded people, didn't comprehended that separated we are nothing, but unified we can do great things. Finally we made them understand or they just had done whatever I told them to do. The rest is well-known. We had created the Confederation, the Russian alliance was even tighter, and we started to conquer the world together.

- Yes, it is the big picture. There are some documents about your many meetings. You explained the monetary system, the economy, but they didn't seem to understand any of it. The practical result they understood. Hungary prospered, and the surrounding states wanted that boom, but were in the ideological darkness, and so they couldn't paste together the two. So a younger generation had to take over the control of those states. The EU parliament couldn't handle the matter. They were too weak for that task, you were stronger.

- Now, that was a cancerous bureaucracy, and we decided to quit as soon as possible. But alone, until we formed the Confederacy, it would have been problematical to do such a thing. The war was necessary just before the establishment of the Confederacy to quit the EU, the NATO, and to get rid of the unwanted elements of the population. The war is a special state of political affairs, when anything plays, force matters only. Heterogeneous societies never prospered. If one part of the society has to feed the other, what kind of stupidity is that? Besides, it wasn't the question of nature or nurture. The inferior lowly races can never be raised up to the standards of the superior. That is the meaning of inferior. You could educate them as long as you wished; they always stayed in the state of idiotism. If a race has to be educated by another, that is the sure sign of the inferiority. Who taught the English, the German, the northern people to have industry, engineering, industrialized agriculture? Nobody ever taught them. They educated themselves. Leave the gypsy, the Negro alone, and they'll slide back to the stone-age. It was the stupidity of the liberal democrats to try to educate them, and they blamed the white people for the backwardness of the inferior races. So they decided to lower the standards of humanity for the inferiors, to fit them in somehow. That was a crime against humanity, so I had to liquidate the inferior races and those stupid liberal democrats with them. They went against the first law of life. They were the enemy of mankind. I handled the problem as a real politician ought to have done long before. I declared them inside enemies and liquidated them all.

(- I just have to tell you something. You always get to the same old line. Those stupid liberal leftist democrats, and the fact, that you have killed them because there was no way to rationally convince them that they were stupid. I can understand your wrath, but it is enough of it. They are no more. Let it go.

- You are right. So as a final word, they were the cause of the detriment of the society and I had to wage the war basically against them and against their ideology. The worst of all, they were totally invincible, their ideology being their religion. And religious people are very stupid usually if not always.)

- All right, Sir. Well, I have what I needed; I think the archive is in order now. There are some documents about your negotiations, but those are not too important. Nevertheless, I will translate them. Thank you for the Baron Gold grade. What is your plan for the future? Are you planning some monument maybe as the crown on your oeuvre? The question is always the same in every age. What would embody the zeitgeist of the given society best?

- We also have a problem. It supposed to express the timelessness. History is over. We are in the age of forever. Now, if I really wanted something like a monument, this small detail would make a big difference between the old historical ages and this one. The pyramids and triumphal arches are out of the question. I would think about something modern, something useful. Well, I am not even sure that I want anything like a monument. The mythology is more timeless than any material construction.

- But the material monument is what everybody can see and touch and so through it make connection to the person identified as the representative of that age. I think it is important for everybody. It must be created together with the mythology, and that is the perfection.

She was right of course. Beside the mythology, a monument wouldn't be a bad idea. He looked at the girls doing their gymnastic exercise. The 2 litre brain sized people will be born or rather come alive soon. Their genome has been finalized, the incubation is in progress. They will be oversized, and almost everybody knew that fact. But they had to know for sure in practice. The humans would have never reached even the  $1850 \text{ cm}^3$  brain volume if they were just waiting for nature to do it. He had no idea what kind of monument would express this sub specie aeternitatis age the best, noblest. He has enough time for that. Now his luxury liners were on their way around the world, 35 of them, and more were worked on all over the world to be launched soon. It proved to be a very good business. The precious metals were released slowly, together with the gemstones and the loose jewellery. This society has everything. They were right some time ago to get rid of the males. The testosterone is bad for a rational and loving community. Long time ago nature moved toward sex. It is not clear what sex is for exactly, and it is one of nature's secrets. Many species can live and multiply without it, and it really is a mystery the biologists cannot solve satisfactorily and finally. We have theories about the purpose of sex, but all of them have its flaws. One thing is sure. With the invention of sex nature created more problems than solved. It created the male for one problem. They fight for the love of fighting. They have the empty self-esteem with a never-ending competition instead of cooperation. The whole history is about nothing else but the upholding the self-esteem, or power. With the advance of the sciences men were not needed anymore for the upbringing of the child. The sex ratio of the savannahs was kept by nature in the ages when the circumstances became very different from the original. But nature works very slowly, and mankind advanced too fast for nature. Nature created the big brain, but didn't calculate with the rational side of the bigger brain. The girls were always different from the boys, and it is not so obvious if we think about it a little deeper. Girls never needed extra inducement to play a role in a lesbian porno movie. Almost any one of them could do that, there was no need to become a lesbian or bisexual, being bisexuals by nature originally. It never was a big deal to have a girl-party which altered into a sex-orgy, and the participants wouldn't even consider themselves lesbians, maybe only curious. It would be unimaginable in a party of men unless they were gay anyway, which is a defect in the genes or in the brain. It was a detectable defect while they could never detect any of those defects in girls between hetero and lesbian. So men were totally useless and changeable in a scientifically advanced age for girls in every field. To get rid of them solved the problems nature created in the first place. Now the nymphos finished the exercise. How beautiful their lovemaking can be? And they are already great stars on the TV. There is the confectionary they make like a piece of art. Same art is their love-making.

- Now what you are going to do? You have taken over the mighty Council, you have money like Croesus, there is no high politics anymore, and no conspiracy is necessary, this peace is going to kill you. How could we start a conspiracy to make you happy again? A massage maybe, or you want to taste our juicy little pleasure-part? It's so tasty and feels so good.

- I am happy, girls, yeah, maybe later. The conspiracies in the history mostly overstated anyway. Of course it made me happy to command couple of them, but in the meantime I realized that the conspiracy theories were not as true as the population thought they were. I mean to say, lots of those conspiracies didn't even exist. They were mostly the product of the critical

state of history. Chance had a lot to do with them, and not the rational planning. Or if they were the results of some directed actions, those actions weren't rationally planned and directed. But of course the dumb likes to invent miracles instead of using logic they don't have.

- This is a great subject. Well, not as great as the sex, but we're calm enough now, listening. So you are saying that many of the conspiracy theories are totally false, or some of them are?

- Some of them must have been. Here we have to make a distinction between the usual political manoeuvre and the conspiracy as we understand here. There always was and had to be the first category. Politics cannot function by the legal laws alone. As to the second, yes, I have some reservations. The monetary system of the credit money was one conspiracy if there ever had one. But it didn't start out as such, although we never can be absolutely sure about that either, but have good reason to believe in it. If you read the Bible, and you read the great story of Joseph and his brothers, there you can find the blueprint for conquering the world by administrative methods. Just to refresh your memory, Joseph, and now we get rid of the storyteller's fancies, so Joseph ordered the people to give up their excess grain they had accumulated during the good times, which represents the wealth, so give up voluntarily and without payment from the government into a communal pool of storage to have enough in case of the bad times. There was no such a thing as confiscation or taxation before that time in Egypt. He, Joseph figured it out how to do it effectively, and later every government deployed his great invention. For the plan to work like a charm, the bad times had to come, and it doesn't matter now if it was natural or man-made. Later, when bad time came and the people needed their own grain or the wealth of the community for survival, the government sold it to them for money. They sold the freely given up storage of grain back to them. This way the government confiscated the virtual wealth, what is the money of the people and what it is worth, and the next logical step of the people would be to sell themselves for slaves to the government. The people asked, begged for it, and it shows that it never happened; it is only an example, know-how. Joseph's brothers sold him for slavery, and that bad enough, but Joseph never held it against them, so what does it tell us? It says that the group is more important than the personal well-being or even the personal being. From this the message is clear: the group is over and above the individual. But this story has a nice little spin in it. The government was in the hands of the Jews in the background. The Pharaoh was only a showpiece, a puppet; didn't know anything, just like the elected officials in the democratic countries. Joseph, after making the free people of Egypt slaves of him basically, invited his brothers and the people of Judea to come and live there freely, and so to keep and use the Egyptians as slaves in practice. The military power of the Pharaoh actually ordered to help the Jews to enslave the people of Egypt. They basically sold out their own people for the Jews, just like the police did in the democracies, most of the members of it having been mercenaries of the monetary power. Remember, Joseph gave the grain gratis to his brothers, meaning his fellow Jews. So here an educated man could see immediately the Jewish plan for subjugating the world for their slaves, and this story is nothing else but telling the future generations of the Jews how to do it, and that they have to do it, because they are the masters of the world by the order of their God, they are the chosen people, meaning that everybody else isn't chosen, meaning the non-Jews ought to be made slaves of the chosen ones. Of course the religious people had read this story differently, that was the problem with religion, the failure of understanding the point, any point. This nice little story was repeated through the ages, and nobody

grasped what it was about in reality, except the Jews of course. Well, those Bible-reading Christians weren't overly smart, I would say idiots. The whole Bible is a fraud without any information to lead your life right, but they never comprehended it was nothing but slogans anyone could make up. Spinoza criticized it ably. No, in reality it was written by the Jews for the Jews, and the thinking men ought to have killed the Jews for it, but no, they cherished that ancient collection of fraud-teaching; their own enslavement. That was a classic conspiracy. But the order to enslave the whole world smoothly was too big order to fulfil, and when it came to practice it failed many times. It presupposes the existence of the *perpetuum mobile* to function in the long run or the stupidity of the people forever. The first is impossibility, the second was in progress. The credit-money finally collapsed under the weight of the debt generated by the exponential function, although it was in effect for centuries. It was not preconceived as such, as fully functional system by some non-existent master-planner, but its beginning was the result of the shortage of the real money in England. From that stage the check-system arose, came to rescue, and the credit-money was instituted nobody understood first, but worked all right in the beginning. Later the working of it was understood by the Jews and by some others as well, and they had made the most out of it. The blueprint is the same as it was written in the story of Joseph. Take the virtual wealth of the world, make the debts impossible to pay back, and you have the people for your debtors as slaves, and you can even tell them a million times it is democracy and freedom. Nobody understood those concepts anyway. That was the game they played through the centuries, sometimes too openly, so they were massacred time to time. Even Rome collapsed under the weight of the usury, even if it was a different kind from the check-money, but the end is the same nonetheless. Obtain the debt, make it legal, make it impossible to pay off, enforce the collection of debt by the power of the state, and you have the people for slaves. But leave this field alone, enough was written about this. As to the politics, the conspiracy theories were born mostly after the French Revolution. It had shocked the world. It was unimaginable for the people of that age.

- They couldn't imagine how the first power on Earth could have been destroyed so easily. That was a fact which forced everybody to think a little deeper. After the revolution of the English, namely Cromwell, the Jews were let back in to England after 300 years of exile. After the French Revolution the Jews were let back in to France and received full rights. After the Russian Revolution the Jews were in the absolute power of that state created, and one anti-Semitic sentence meant death-sentence by the code of laws, and this is no joke. The whole operation was for and to the acquisition of the monetary power and to enslave the people, just as you can read in the Bible in the story of Joseph. The conservatives started to imagine some non-existent societies behind the scene. They wrote books about them, giving many plans for the organizations imagined to existence. Great minds worked on it, mostly because of the organization of the Illuminati, which was discovered before the Revolution, but was dissolved by the German Bayern Government 4 years before that. Nevertheless, the conservatives imagined it as still in existence and working behind the scenes. The leftist would never have figured it out, but the conservatives have done it for them, and on those writings the leftists had built the organization, perfected by the right-wingers. What they failed to understand was the critical state of the history and the laws of the critical state. The fractals are the only law in that state. You cannot consider causality in the critical state like you could in pure logic.

- Basically, yes, they calculated on the equilibrium or linear state of history. But the old history was in the critical, meaning it could go whichever direction it wants, independently of the force applied, basically anytime. There weren't many years when history was in equilibrium. Later the Russian Revolution adopted the plans of the conservatives, and the whole history of the Soviet Union was a conspiracy. The commissars held their meeting at night, they travelled secretly, even after the Soviet Union had already been established and their power was unchallenged. It was a Jewish creation from the beginning, or so they said. It is a little hazy, so I wouldn't make that statement so clearly. The first Bolsheviks were American Jews for sure, mostly from Brooklyn, and the language of the political committee was jiddish first.

- It is something scary about the Bible. There was the plan for everybody to see, and they were so stupid to comprehend what they are reading. No wonder somebody with a good theory could demolish that system. Or rather it wasn't that easy, exactly because of the stupidity of the populace. You can have the only true ideology if they don't understand it or refuse to understand it or those who would be hurt by the outcome refuse it and come up with some trashy ideology for the people, so they are kept in darkness. That trash was the liberal democracy. It was specifically designed to keep the mind of the people in the misty and misty state, far from the truth in order to enslave them.

- Exactly. Marx did a half-way good job first, and his followers were nowhere near to what Marx said, but were called Marxists, and they had made everything obscure on some solidly forged field they didn't even understand. Marx didn't know about the genes or thermodynamics, so when he searched for some material base to build a theory upon he went all the way back to the agents of production as the material base, which causes the creation of some social relation among the people they don't have to have knowledge of, so that is why it's can be called objective concept. He had some right to do that, although it is easily refutable today, and was refutable even at the time of his writings. It was a half-way stop on the links of the causes in the logic, and to stop half-way and call the intermediate a final stage is a crime in the real philosophy. Marx was not a philosopher, he was only an ideologist, and that is big difference. He made some grave mistakes; he used gold money when analysed capitalism, although even then the credit-money was in effect big time. Fictive money made the industrial revolution possible, it made people poor, so the inflation, the lowering the purchasing power of money concentrated in some places called investment, factories. But in the beginning the exponential function is flat, non-existent almost. He never understood the essence of money. But it would take us too far back, and many books had explained it even if they never apprehended the real truth. But the development of the agents of production alone as the material base to explain and built upon a society is a very stupid theory. It wrongly equalised the people, and that was a mistake which had cost a lot later. The Marxists basically said to give the agents of production to the common people, completely independently of their qualification, such as if they are mentally fit to run it, and then will come Paradise. What had come was Hell. The stupidest inherited the Earth, and the liberal democrats were there to defend it. Marx never really said to give the stupidest the right to run the production-system or the government. He said: ennable the people first and when they are fit enough to run both, get rid of the idiocies of the capitalism. But of course the Jews saw Marxism as the modernised tale of Joseph and they created the liberal democracy to subjugate the people using the proletariat as the mass they can send to be killed in a war against the smart ones, like in Athens. The prole-

tariat swallowed it, and we had the communism and the western democracies, all the same, only the surface was different. It also shows the inferiority of the common people. This is very good, this confectionary. I'll be fat if I eat more.

- Drink some wine or eat some pussy. We can offer the best of both. Can we try the Hungarian crown on? If you open the vitrine, we could.

- OK. For centuries nobody could touch it. They thought it is some holy piece. The truth is, it is a very badly made crown, we don't know when was it made, and the base is some Byzantine female coronet, and they built it hastily up with no logic. Look, there are some holes in it for no purpose. Someone screwed it up big time. We made that new one here for the coronation of the Great King. New beginning needed a new symbol. Now, this one is sublime.

- And nobody tried to make the cross straight? It really is an amateurishly made piece. What are those monies? They made them out of silver and gold? Now, that was a non-thinking mind who figured that one out. It completely contradicts of the essence of money. It is inane.

- Well, at the beginning it wasn't. The Spartans first had precious metal monies, later they made it from iron, and finally they'd got rid of money altogether. They were right, but they were the exemption. To make money from precious metals means that the total quantity of the metal is functioning as money. It also means that the yearly increment of the metal, the yearly production of the mines will be added to the monetary base, and this increment is an inflationary factor by itself. For that reason, to keep the purchasing power of money constant, ever growing production of goods is necessary year after year, in ever increasing quantity. There will be a point where the money won't be sufficient to buy the produced goods, logically. It is the time for the crash, and everything starts anew wrongly, just as before. The failure of understanding created the failure of capitalism. Later the credit-system operated more or less the same way. They imagined the gold into existence like it was mined and in the safe, so the failure built into the credit system just the same. The gold money was a grave mistake.

- They had tried to keep a differential coefficient in equilibrium with its own integral, and that is possible only in one case, which is the exponential function. Here we have the origin of the interest on the loan as the payment for the inflation caused by the yearly increment of the production of the mines of gold and silver. You wrote this. They made the quantity of the commodity, instead of the number and face value of the coins as the monetary base. That was a major mistake, an illogical one. For money there is no need to have material backup, since it is a measure. The back-up of the money is the productive power of the people, the development of the capital goods: the agents of production in production.

- Only in the case of real money. But as the case of barter it is partially defendable. You got so much human work-time for so much human work-time. In barter the value of the merchandise is set on the work-time the purchaser needed to create the goods, not the sellers, the actual creator. The gold and silver had to be mined, which is hard work, producing high unit-value commodity, of which we have only very limited quantity on Earth. If the gold would have been usable for something else in production of consumers' goods, as it is today, it would have worked better, but of course still would have been faulty as money. The gold and silver wasn't used for anything productive like today, so the work of one part of the society, those who were doing the mining of the gold and silver had been wasted. Their unnecessary work actually raised the prices of the consumer goods through their salary and profit. One side of the equation fails, the equation is wrong. When they started to use the gold as real money, the

inflation-problem came to the fore. Interest had to be paid because of the yearly increment and the increase of the virtual wealth had no connection ( in which case it would have worked just fine), and society was required to work ever more to keep the same level of standard of living. The difference pocketed by the money-changers. The other problem was the use of the gold and silver as jewellery. What happened in good times? What is needed in ever growing quantity when the economy is booming? Money needed, higher wages needed to buy the production of the industry. Where did the gold and silver go in good times? It became jewellery; it went out of the monetary circulation. So because of this double function of the precious metals the good time was soon over, and when the prices went down again after the industry was destroyed by the lack of purchasing power of the people, the insufficient money in circulation, then the jewellery converted to money again, because then it was worth to change back, but it was the bad time then, the deflationary equilibrium, so the newly created money in this situation caused an inflation at the lower production level. Too much money and not enough goods create inflation. The smart professors of economy just couldn't figure out why the depressions were so precisely periodically regular. A little logic of thermodynamic thinking makes everything clear and understandable. They couldn't figure it out even in my time. Economist scientists they were called. I think they were just a bunch of idiots. They wanted some backing up for the money. They didn't understand that it is a contradiction. The essence of the money is that it is backed up by the productive capability of the society, and not by some metal or insurance by another currency, which is worthless anyway in case of the crash. Money is the measure of the virtual wealth, and the virtual wealth is the one and only quantity that determines the purchasing power of money, and not the opposite way around. They tried to get around it, so they failed. They never understood what virtual wealth is. It has two sides, the material and the psychical. I don't really think they ever understood anything except how to make pieces of paper, called debt, because it is easy to do. They had nice little worthless theories which failed one after another, but they kept making the new wrong ones. They were the sexy boys; their knowledge wasted on being popular in their circle. The main guys, the ones in charge, they understood all right, they were interested in the up-keeping of the system of cheating and fraud. They created fiction, credit money, by the stroke of the pen and through it they kept society in the state of financial slavery. Joseph's tale, exactly what it was; only modernised. It was a real, Joseph-copied conspiracy, controlling the virtual wealth. The periodicity of the good and bad times was included in the system, so they caused it.

- That was the reason you could charge the leaders of your time with treason against the people. The Jews couldn't logically be charged with treason by having no home, no country; they always lived on the fat of the people. But the elected leaders could have charged with treason legally. With the Jews there is no need to bother with legality to exterminate them.

- The elected were the paid puppets of the money-people. For treason there is only one kind of punishment possible. They were all executed when I took over the power. Every mother-fucking one of them were shot and killed who set foot in the Parliament and didn't say a word against the monetary system of the past. And I didn't care which side they represented. Every one of them deserved to die, and they knew they are going to die, and they knew there is no pardon. They were like worms or even worse. I never left an enemy behind, and the extermination

nation is the best way to achieve that goal. I had better things to concern with. The vermin had to perish, they had no place and shouldn't have a voice in the new society. Dead is silent.

- Heroic time it was. We have started out with the Hungarian crown. OK. I place it back. The French crown is here too. France never had a Queen. The most lovers of the dames, the original troubadours never had one for Queen. Very interesting, isn't it? Do you know the reason?

- "The lilies do not weave". In 1328, after the Capet-dynasty has died out, the Peers of France had a council-meeting to decide about the person of the next king, so the Marechal of France uttered this famous sentence. The female-line was closer to the Capet-house, but the male-line was chosen. Why? Because of this sentence uttered, and nobody has questioned it in the council. There was no law against the inheritance in the female-line. It was one of those frozen history-pieces. Once uttered, and that was it. The lilies were the symbol of France or rather the House of Anjou first, later the whole of France. It started the age of the Valois dynasty up to 1594, when the Bourbons inherited the throne. That sentence also started the Hundred-years' War and in the process the nobles of England and France were almost eliminated, annihilated, and a new nobility appeared, and the age of the knights was over by 1453, or even more pronounced was the end by 1525, when the battle of Padua they say was the last battle fought according to knightly manners or the first fought by the new manner, and all that because of one silly sentence. The critical-stage history can go to any direction. The real knights died out at the end, and the knights of the money appeared on the scene. Why do I have this strange feeling that you girls keep asking me questions so I can be happy by explaining things? I am happy to explain, but don't do it just for me, OK? The main lesson is that first time we made history as the three real thermodynamic systems in equilibrium. Give me some sweets you made. And wine. Life is beautiful. You girls are marvellous.

- OK, Daddy, here you are. Do you know how much money we're receiving from the TV? We are rich. It is called the new art of pornographic gymnastics. We'll make it even better. Now we have a purpose in life, thanks to you. They say we are real artists. We have followers all over the world. I think they'll even have a contest. Don't worry; none knows we are here.

- That is good news. When you record your art, don't show the pictures and other valuables. I am so happy for you, girls. Well, I was thinking the other day.

- Don't do anything you're not equipped with to perform. OK, joking, I just quoted you. What were you thinking about, daddy? We just sit here on your legs. Tell us, tell us, please.

- So you girls are the stars of the art of porno, and millions are watching you every day. So let's say you would place a genuine pearl to the end of your tongues here, wouldn't that make your sexual pleasure even more enjoyable or something new?

- To pierce the tongue? Isn't that too painful?

- No need for that. We have this new glue, you put the pearl to your tongue with it, and it holds on strong enough for the purpose you put it on. Later you just drop couple of drops of other liquid there, and the pearl comes off easy. Actually you can glue gems too to any parts of your body-skin. I have lots of pearls. Here they are, and here is the glue. Try it. Here is the anti-glue. One of my labs makes this, and your TV porno-art is the best commercial for the marketing. You'll have your cut from the sales. Besides, only works with real pearl. So we can put some more to the market, and it will be useful beside functions as treasure too. How is it on the tongue? Feels all right? Try it, girls...

- Wow, it is a new dimension of the pleasure-making. Her tongue is unbelievable now... Huh, the girls deserve to discover something new. OK, we'll do it. We'll explain the gluing too. Thanks, Dad.

- We can glue some gem-stone even here, on our treasure, just above where she bulges out, or both sides on the lips, like this. One of us will have diamond, other sapphire, other ruby. Actually she looks good, now I have a 5 carat diamond pussy.

- Yeah, we can create something for each art-piece we do. With the right lighting it'll shine perfectly. Well, if the whole world is watching us, at least we give them something to watch. Pussies priced a fortune and tongues pleasuring perfectly and gymnastic of the highest class and ecstasy of the minute-long squirting orgasm is worth watching. I think all of our fans will have orgasm with us just by emotionally being together with us. They write us a lot. They can pleasure themselves much better by watching us. That's good. We're very useful for them.

Well, at least he has done something good for the people. Of course the glue and the pearls became a great success immediately. OK, what else to do for mankind? Would be nice to start the mythology, but something is still missing for it. It will come in time. Now, let's create a motorcycle, that is the best way to go somewhere just for the pleasure of riding, the free love of speed. Like the old Harley-Davidson, yes, that would be a good cycle to ride. He explained to the masters and they figured out the way to manufacture it. Soon it was ready. The knights enjoyed it too, mostly naked. But some new kind of riding-clothes will be better for the safety and security. Many kinds of motorcycles were manufactured very soon. Another industry boomed. The 2 litre brain-sized people were growing fast, they were all right, but didn't show too much difference yet intellectually. But how could they? They are too young to know yet. In time this will be solved. We have time, plenty of time. Eternity, if the doctors are right. The students asked him to lecture and he decided in favour. He went quite often.

- OK. I cannot tell you anything new, so let's try some interactive play here. You all are familiar with the old follies, so I ask you to play the role of the liberal democrats and refute my ideological views. So I am saying first that the government supposed to keep the freedom of choice intact for majority or minority. One should take care of herself first freely.

- But if everybody would be free to do what they wanted would result chaos, so the government have to make laws for the people according to the democratic values. The democracy is the decision of the majority, and even if it opposes some people's rights, everybody has to be forced to keep the laws. Everybody is free to live according to the laws of the land.

- Would you oppose my right to keep arms to defend myself? The majority is against it, because some people might use the arms for some unlawful purpose and the majority is coward every time. So instead of train and develop themselves, they just outlaw all the guns.

- Of course. Nobody is permitted to bear arms. That is the only way for the government to control the people. People have to be controlled. You never know what they are about to do with the arms. There were accidents before, so we get rid of every accident once and for all.

- The criminals can have guns, so the populace will be without the means of defending itself.

- The police are permitted only to have guns, and they will deal with the criminals. Even if they cannot be everywhere every time, the criminals will be brought to justice sooner or later.

- But exactly because they are unable to prevent the criminals to do harm, the armed populace would be able to do that. Shooting the criminals on the spot would prevent the crime all right.
- But you would shoot some people who is only about to commit a crime which is punishable by some years in prison. So the overreaction of the people would be manslaughter. We cannot agree with that. Criminals have right too. They're humans, and humans have right to live.
- The crime rate would go back to almost zero, if the criminal knew he would be killed by any bystander, so it is not a high price to pay for a crime-free society. The crime-rate was always very low in the countries where the citizens had the right to bear arms, and always have risen when that right was taken away. And what do you do about the rights of the victims? They are not citizens to protect?
- The criminals brought to justice and they serve time. That is the revenge of the victims.
- OK. So if I understand you well, the people who are eligible to vote, which is the same as being rational and thoughtful citizens every time when there is an election, these citizens are too stupid to decide what is good for them and society in a given circumstance? The rational and smart citizens after the elections, together with their vote transferred all their rights to the chosen ones to decide on their fate, and they have no more saying about their own rights? They are only a mob, a thoughtless horde of animals after they have transferred their power to the government? With their vote there goes their sanity too? That is what you are saying?
- The elected government makes the laws, and everybody is required to live accordingly. The vote of the majority is the law. Guns are not permitted, because the majority doesn't want it. The government makes laws, and enforce the laws. For this organization we have to pay tax, also for the welfare of the jobless and the dull, and everybody else the government bureaucracy selects which are in need of their help, and distribute the money collected by taxation.
- So it is better to construct and maintain bureaucratic machinery which doesn't work, doesn't create any value for the market whatsoever, and usually too busy to make more laws and regulations for the people, against the people, too busy to collect the taxes, ever more taxes from the productive people and spend it on the bureaucratic machinery to grow ever bigger and don't let the people decide freely and locally what is good for them? The mind of the bureaucrat is not on the production of the real goods and services; they are too blunt for that, but only on the making of ever more laws and regulations and to swell the machinery, increase their number, so they can become bosses, sexy-boys. The more they are the more chance there is to become some kind of boss in the organization. The police are member of the bureaucracy, so are the regulators, the welfare officers, the God knows what other creations of never needed offices, and your tax goes to this unproductive slime of half-humans to thrive on. If you acknowledged that the people at the election are the same minded people as after the elections, you would save half of your salary and live twice as well, or you would work half as much and live at the same standard as you do now. The election is invalid if the people who voted are mindless idiots. The elections are held and recognized as valid only if you're presuming that the voters are smart enough to choose the leaders and the programs the leaders present to them. If it is true at the time of voting, it must be true later as well, after the vote. To maintain the bureaucratic machinery and give away half of your salary ergo is not justified if the election is valid. It is a self-contradiction built in the liberal democracy. They are trying to solve every possible foreseeable problem society might have in the future by making tons of laws and regulations, but it is completely in contradiction with logic and sci-

ence. Gödel proved, and proved very ably and scientifically that there is no such thing as a final resolved system built on axioms. There can be a million laws and regulations, functioning as propositions mathematically, and still new problems will emerge, for which problems new laws and new regulations are needed to infinity. Mankind will be drowned into regulations, every individual loses her identity and freedom, and still more and more regulations are needed, which regulations won't solve anything, won't create anything valuable, won't put new wealth to the market, but the result is the exact opposite what was the assumed purpose of those laws. Society will be poorer, society will become a prison, and the chosen leaders will be the wardens of the prison in contradiction what they were elected for and hired to do. Taxes are not essential in a free society. The citizens are able to decide for themselves in a free society. If the government thinks and acts differently, that government is the enemy of the society, and the duty of the people is to liquidate that government and for this reason people must bear arms. Whenever different political parties arise within a society, it shows clearly only that something is very wrong with that society. The political power must not be divided in any healthy society. It is a very sick society, and not a democratically advanced or developed one which cannot come to some final agreement. The problem with democracy is that the liberals think it is beneficial if many different views exist beside each other and they call it a developed, advanced state of their kind of democracy. They have not the haziest idea what democracy means and they themselves are illogical people. The real reason to take society apart and generate different views is to develop their dictatorship over the sick society to control the acts and the monetary affairs of the people, and have power over them under the mask or pretence of doing some good for them. Always be aware of the people who want to do some good for you, and want to establish some bureau for that end. They always do very bad things under their mask. Always kill or oust the leader who wants more taxation or bureaucracy for the good of society. Free and smart citizens do not need anybody to tell them what is good for them. The government has to be kept very small, and the freedom of choice, not only yours, but everyone's must be protected, be it majority or minority. That is the way of the freedom, not the liberal democracy. In the place of the welfare money, for which your tax is given away, the working hours should be decreased, so everybody can do useful work and keep the same standard of living. A small, maybe 2 – 3% sales-tax should be enough for the needs of government to guard the freedom of the people instead of guarding the laws and regulations to grow ever more. No need hiring more police, instead the citizens should be drilled in the use of arms, and their duty should be to bear arms and use the arms when needed all the time, so everybody should become a volunteer police officer. Give the people responsibility, and they will become responsible citizens. Take the responsibility away from them, give it to the bureaucrats, and the people become an irresponsible mob. The ineffective judges have to be unbenched and work some useful work, and the smart citizens should take over their job easily and much more efficiently without the maze of regulations. Who needs bureaucrats to tell her what to do? Only the sheep, the lowly, and these shouldn't be able to bear children. With an IQ-test they are very easy to select out and they must be neutered. I mean in the past, not now. That was a small price to pay, the ever-growing bureaucracy cost zillions. Free and smart society with homogenized cultural views and straight and understandable politics is the only progress and it is the exact opposite of the way of the liberal leftish democracy. Am I understood? Thanks for the applause. And now imagine that I had to

explain this in my age to idiots, the sheep, and now you understand how hard it was to exist in that society for which these self-evident truths I had to explain. Barbarian professors, idiotic views, thoughtless laws, it was awful. In this case the end sanctifies the means.

- Sir, what was the logic behind the community ownership of the land?

- Some time ago, maybe couple of thousand years back the land was for everybody, nobody owned it, because nobody created it. So in reality we couldn't call it community property, because it just wasn't property at all, but let's name it like that. As time elapsed, the freemen still had the land as the property of the community, and they grew things on it. Nobody in his right mind even thought to actually own the land. The workers owned the fruits of the land, but not the land itself. Later the nobility owned the land in theory, but that wasn't real ownership, only the care was given and the production organized by them. With the capitalism came the real ownership of the land. The title was given to the land. Now, that is a contradiction. Never in the history of mankind was a legal possibility to do this. The individual is part of the society, but he cannot give up his rights, and cannot give up the rights of his offspring, the future generation. A group of individuals cannot come together and give the title of their land to a new owner, because they have no right to do so, never was. It is an inalienable right of the community to have the land, and the community is not equal to the total of the members of the community. It is something more, something timeless, and the members of the given community are thinking in the present, but the community must think in the eternity. So every title for the land is null and void, the law was imprudent not to be aware of the impossibility of private ownership, so we've only restored the logical and only possible state again. The land is for the community, nobody has the right to give up his right to it, and the land must be given free of charge to those who grow something on it while they work the land. It is natural today, and was natural long ago; only the foolish capitalism made the big mistake, and it had cost a lot. The food is absolute important, and we cannot let anyone to play with that commodity. The land must be worked, and must be worked at the best possible way, so it produces plenty for cheap. There is no such thing as overproduction of agriculture. The excess produce always can be used for energy in the worst case, but good for many different chemicals, as you well know it today. It grows almost free by the process of nature, so there is no wasted material basically. The land cannot be rented by the owner, because the rent only raises the prices and produces a non-productive class of people living on the rent, which is a perpetuum mobile of the second type, which doesn't exist in reality, so it shouldn't be allowed in society either. Everything which is in contradiction with the laws of thermodynamics must be eliminated, so the society can flourish. This is all we have to do, but the very stupidest of my age couldn't even understand what science is, being mostly lawyers in the parliament. Those were the lowest kind of humans intellectually. The man-made legal law and the scientific law are two very different kinds of animals. The lawyers thought they can go against the laws of science. They screwed up everything they touched. The economy went down, the standard of living went down, but the bureaucracy just didn't stop growing and growing, because now the people were unable to solve any of their problems, so someone had to do it for them and create more problems and more useless people. They have done the impossible; they created the social perpetuum mobile. For a while it looks as works just fine. It decreases the potential, increases the entropy, so as long as we produce extra negentropy it works fine. Too bad it diminishes the virtual wealth of the society so fast that in some years

the entropy increases to maximum. That is the time the lawyers, the representatives in the parliament thank society, they pocket their profit which was stolen from the people, and they think that is all. Well, with me they have miscalculated a little. They can play with themselves, with their private parts, but if they were hired to protect the wealth, the potential of the society, and they steal it, annihilate it, that is punishable only by death. OK, I think I have spoken enough; I love you, thanks for the invitation, kids. Cherish what you have here and now. Enjoy life in full, guard this society, and love each other.

(- Fine. You lectured, played the old games with the students, your money grew, and basically you had nothing to do, except riding replicas of old bikes, enjoying the restaurants of the city, the aesthetic of the female bodies, the baked cookies and pies, and still thinking about the monument you wanted to build. The 2 litre sized humans developed into kids, and they were smart, but had a little problem.

- They couldn't sustain their head right. It was too much weight for the neck. Well, it wasn't that much of a problem, the weight was exactly at the limit the neck still could handle, and with the strengthening of the muscles it was corrected. They're nice, smart, but little over the hill. Their beauty lost some by the oversized head. Everything has a final perfection, and they were over that perfection. Yes, I had nothing to do, we realized that we've reached the final state of mankind, the perfection if you prefer. I enjoyed life with my wives, my girls, the lectures, and everything else. Many years went by.)

- Sir, I think it would be very beneficial if you started to write your book soon.

- I am not ready yet. Something is missing for the end, besides I became too lazy. I just enjoy life finally in full. The doctors cannot tell me my lifetime, meaning I will be alive forever, or nearly so. History is closed, every ideological problem is solved, the humans are perfect with the  $1850\text{ cm}^3$  brain-size, because anything bigger just an extra load without any rational plus. What is still missing is the crown of the life-work. But I am too lazy to work on it. Inspector, you have any suggestion?

- No, Sir. It has been 17 years I am teaching in the University. The archive is completely processed, everything is in order, if you're asking me any question about that, I can answer it. What I mean is, it is your monument, you have to build it, and you have to make it a reality.

- My dear girls are about to leave me. I got so used to their presence, their beautiful figure, but they are right of course. They are 33 year old and rich enough to live alone, so they move to a lower level in the tower. Now I will be alone, well, almost, but the General and the Prince visit me sometimes. OK, I'll think about the crown of the life-work.

At home he looked out of the window or rather the wall to the city, looked long and it started to come to him. The monument was right here, in front of his eyes day after day only he couldn't catch it so far. Now he saw it.

- OK, daddy, we are about to go. The General was here, and she can't let you live alone. Here are the gifts.

- What gift, my dearests?

- The 2 litre sized gifts. They are 15 years old, three of them are here. She wants you to be surrounded by youngsters, because if you get used to somebody you're apt to do nothing. So

for educational purposes she stations some new kids here. Here they are. Not as beautiful as we are, but who knows, maybe they are smarter, although that is not proven either. Come, dears, here is the great man who you can thank for your life. They were constructed above the limit, you know, and they are really yours. Come, dears.

- Hello, Sir. It is a pleasure to know you. Is everything all right, Sir?

- Yes, I think so. I'm just thinking about something. OK, make yourself a home here. And you send me sometimes those baked goodies, girls, OK? I'll keep watching you on TV.

After the change of the girls, he ended up with three 15 years old kids. Something is different. They wore clothes, well, some of the time they did, they had new memory, and they didn't know the old stories, so everything can be started again. And they did go out. A little bigger head made some of their beauty disappear by the difference. But they weren't ugly, no way. After some of days they felt at home, the story-telling they listened to, he was young again. The plan was clear. The magnitude he wasn't sure about. He talked it over with the kids.

- We help you with it. First order the labs to come up with a material which is very strong, very light, possibly transparent, and can be manufactured in great quantities. We make the model, many models, and you decide which one is the best. We want to be part of the mythology, because we are the living proof that everything is in order. So we get the computer, and the three-dimensional models are just like the reality. OK, go somewhere, get the materials to the building, and let your life-work be crowned grand-style.

- It is only a symbol of the advancement of humanity. A very expensive and showy piece of symbol it is. But you are right. It has to be built, and the book has to be written. Work on it, and the chemists will work on the material. Finally I get out of the idleness. I am happy you girls are here; proofs of the perfection achieved.

It took about half a year to finally come up with the material base of the plan. A factory had to be redesigned and made suitable for the production of the new substance. The plan was ready; the architects were working on the big-scale planning. The whole Downtown will be covered by a dome, a cupola very high, and it will have many levels. The balusters should be heavy and strong. The dome will be constructed with built-in apartments. The Castle will be in the borderline such a way that the towers will be half-way inside the dome, but who lives in the towers can look out to the outside of the city too. The diameter of the dome is about 5 km, and will have many levels; so this way many apartments will be built in it. The material used is hard and light and transparent, and the outside of the dome mostly covered by light-cells, which generate electricity. The Downtown will have the same temperature, be it winter or summer or any kind of weather outside. The material used, never decays. It is constructed to last forever. It will take about 5 years to build this magnificent dome with apartments on the surface and many levels of swimming pools, spas, shops and GYMs and everything a great city needs. The stature of the dome is incredible with its 800 metres. Thousands of flats will be built in it, many levels created in different places. The inside towers function as elevators and balusters too. The world has never seen anything like it. It was calculated that the building pays for itself in about 20 years by the rent the flats and the hotels and shops will generate. The whole world want to see this miracle of the human might, and everybody wants

to live here for some time at least. The apartments can be rented for any time-period, and anyone can come and go as she pleases. The swimming pools and bathes will be in the open, so everybody can use those even between shopping, and whenever she just wants some refreshment during work at home or shopping, no need to wear clothes. It is like a great apartment with lots of communal places. It also represents the human head and brain.

- I think we have to wait for the miracle to appear. The factory is mine, and that material will be needed in many other places. This is the best for building. So, I calculated that I come up from this monument-building even richer. But it is secondary importance. The point is, it won't decay, won't be demolished, will stand forever for real usage. Exegi monumentum.

- I don't want to repeat halleluiahs every time. It is nice, big, and that is the end of it. We'll see how it looks when ready. In the meantime you don't want to start that stupid book? You just talk about it, and never do anything.

- I am too involved with this organization and design of the dome. I know it will be ready, I know it is in able hands, but it is my child. Five years, and we'll see what comes out of it.

Five years of hard work and there it was. The whole Downtown area under a big cupola with thousands of apartments, exquisite inside, it was even more beautiful as it looked on the model. Green areas and pools, restaurants, the original and new shops easily accessible from everywhere, and the trend was the nudism under the dome. One could rest or even sleep in the communal places, swim and have a bath freely, and make love of course in the little hidden places to feel more comfortable. With the  $1850 \text{ cm}^3$  brain-sized people taking over the population more and more, it was essential, since they just had that urge more often and stronger. The whole world wanted to see this wonder. It was ready; the people were ready for it. The greatest achievement humankind has ever accomplished, populated by the brightest, smartest people possible by the perfect genome. Nature has been overpowered finally. The work is done. The mythology of its creation should be written down finally.

- You are a genius, dad. Being naked gives us the total freedom to do anything. Look, the pools are always in use, the robots collect the towels and have the fresh ones ready, they can be employed as cleaners and sales-people, and basically for every kind of menial job. The reconstruction of the industry was successful. The buildings are manufactured by three-dimensional copiers. The mining and the heavy work is done by robots, and the people are receiving money as right to buy the essentials of life. So nobody needs to beg. All feels safe. Well, it is better if she finds some work, but if doesn't want to, or busy with some long-time project, she can depend on the unconditional payment; a little more sales-tax worth it.

- Yeah, at one point in the development of the economy it is hard to find a job, especially if the jobs are taken over by robots. Why would anybody be forced to do menial jobs just for the sake of labour? The energy-problem is solved, so the large brain should be much better used for learning and practicing engineering and science. Otherwise why to make the large brain, right? Yeah, sex too, but the large brain likes to create, doesn't like the menial work, and even if there is no need to work to have the daily food and shelter, it just want to create something, and now it is free to do so. I think this freedom to create will bring fore some very interesting innovations still unknown to us. The masters won't just stop working, no way.

They come up with new things, because of the love of creation. So will the engineers and the scientist. Somehow finally we created the communism, not the old kind, but the only possible way. This unconditional payment is calculated into the salary, so won't create inflation. The problem so far was the unmeasured work, and the freedom for all to do whatever she wants with her money. The communism of this kind really only now became available, although long ago in Alberta, Canada, Major Douglas introduced the unconditional payment, and it was all right until Canada was culturally homogenous, the immigrants from the lowly races didn't poison their society. The people worked, they knew their duty. Later the idea of the communism became very different mostly after the works of Marx and his monkey followers. They lowered the standard, mixed the races, nobody worked, and all wanted the welfare. Here and now it's different, nobody will become parasite, unlike in my time.

- And the money in circulation is necessary to take out the merchandise put on the market, so more and better can be manufactured. Well, someone can buy a robot, but that cost more than she can save out of the free money received of course. They will work all right. Everybody wants to be somebody in society, to become part of the system, useful, creative.

- Yes, my dear. The voluntary participation and the wanting of social acceptance and rank was the original Western culture. That free money is absolutely necessary not only for the smooth functioning of the economy, but maybe a new Kierkegaard will appear, and this time she doesn't have to die on the street because of lack of food and shelter, like the great Danish died young on the street of Copenhagen, unknown and alone. Or Spinoza passed away before the age of 45 by silicosis, because he had to grind glasses to make a living, or Riemann died young by lack of food and money, in tuberculosis. The greatest philosophers had this kind of problem, and who knows what else they could have created living longer and living a more decent life without worries of the everyday problems, like food and shelter. Besides, we don't know about those who didn't create anything, although capable to do so, but had to work for a living through all their life. Great minds don't like to do menial work; it's their death.

- Yes, the world has lost many great thoughts and thinkers in history. Well, we won't lose anyone. Look, your three porno-gymnasts are on that three-dimensional movie. I am happy we are naked. Wait, we have to participate in that communal orgasm. We need one or two right now. You have the whisky there, they serve good food too. Sit down, watch and enjoy.

- Good day, Sir. We have the greatest whisky in town and the food is the highest quality.

- Yes, please. By the way, are you human or robot? I can hardly differentiate.

- I am a robot, Sir. The newest, that is, equipped with the perfected memory. I never get tired, and am very pleased you mistook me for a human. I'll be right back with the order. Oh, the General is here. May I bring the usual, Madame General? But of course I will.

- Well, darling, isn't this just perfect?

- Sometimes I feel the people disconnect from nature too much, but yes, it is perfect.

- There is a new trend all over the world. Some likes to go back and live the life of the old times. Well, not for their whole life, but some may. Some from the older generation likes that. They make their own food; have their animals, a community even. The memory becomes too overloaded, and that is a good way to renew and later they can enjoy this artificial life again. Or just go for resurrection. Oh, God, that mutual enjoyment of life is spectacular. Good thing they can shower after, or just swim; might lick fingers too, that taste yummy.

- They cannot resist, but copy my darlings. That famous DeBroglie-wave connects them all. Here comes our order, thank you, android sweetheart. Nature is interesting some of the time. The large brain and the mistakes of nature just cannot be fit side by side harmoniously for long. Nature is not nice. Nature is about killing and sacrificing the lives. Very blunt thought that nature will solve everything, like it could think. In nature there are two possibilities; the hunger of the wolf or the pain of the sheep. Some always have to die in order to others to stay alive a little longer. Either the wolf dies by hunger or the sheep will be taken apart by the wolf. The individual is the last thing what matters in nature; the singular have to die selectively, and we don't even can say that the best stay alive. There is no measure of the goodness, only whichever singular dies we say it wasn't fit enough. After the facts and it could be by accident, so there is no goodness in reality, but we imagine this concept to existence. I had to deal with those very childish professors of some no-science who thought they are so very smart by defending nature in any circumstances. Well, I put them to a cell, and asked them if they are fit or not to survive by their standard. Because everyone in a failure position has to die according to their theory if nature is always right, and now they were in that position. Most of them died, so they proved the theory, I am superior. The large brain cannot stand that brainless state of affairs of nature or anything irrational for long. But we cannot tell the people what to do. If they want some change; they can have it as long as they want. They appreciate civilization even better after that trip to the wilderness. We don't tell the people how to live their life. They figure it out. It is their freedom of choice.

- Well, they don't stay too long that is for sure. This place is perfect. Society is perfect. They don't escape from society; just want to try some different life-style. We've created the second nature perfectly. Everyone fits in. Good old Schelling would be happy now.

- He would, wouldn't he? Too bad we cannot resurrect him. I'd like to chat with him for sure.

Life is really great now. The whisky is excellent, the food is tasty, the view is hilarious, and the people are happy and even happier since they introduced the unconditional payment for everybody. Of course, no one wanted to live only on that, it was sufficient only for the basic food and living, but one could live on it until her work or idea brings fruits. The students had no more problems, so they could concentrate on the studies, the masters could make better and newer merchandise knowing there is sufficient money to buy it. Everything was just perfect. The people were having mutual orgasm over there, others doing their everyday business, statues and fountains and green places here and there, perfect humans everywhere, so the mythology is next. Now it can be written; sooner or later that work should and ought to be done.

- I think we can finally set to the duty of writing that stupid book. You girls want to help me?  
- Of course. You just sit down, start the tale, and we write it. Sometimes maybe we give you instruction, or ask questions, but it also can be the part of the mythology. We might even figure out the way to send the ready book back to the age before you started the whole revolution. That would be a real deal, wouldn't it? Well, we might figure out something to that end.  
- I can start at the streets of Budapest, shooting gypsies and niggers at nights or with the conference before the war, doesn't really matter, everything comes up somewhere anyway.



- Let's start with the meeting convened in the Castle of Buda just before the war. We write the plain facts first, and we'll have time later to discuss the theory, the reactions of the people and so on. The very beginning of this book should be a powerful one. Who wore what kind of clothes, how they looked like, these are the rubbish written when the writer has nothing to offer, or has got so tired that his brain cannot imagine anything constructive. So cut the crap, and tell it straight what

happened at the historical meeting in the Castle just before the war. No need for the description of the walls, the weather, and other usual boring things. We are writing mythology now. We can start it anywhere, and finish it anywhere, and at the end it will come together anyway. For this they have to read through this book. We can mention that this is not the usual "good guys win at the end" book or rather the good guy is different from the brainless liberal democrat, the politically correct stupid guy. So no need to wait for some hero Saviour, who restores the peace, saves the world for democracy ever. This is a whole different book with deep and unusual thoughts; at least for those who are able to think.

- OK. The leaders of some of the Eastern-European countries got together for a final meeting to discuss the war soon to be started in the region. Yes, it will be a good starting point. As Schelling once said, the mythology is timeless. I directed that part of the world then, and I called the meeting to Buda. The leaders or dictators of all the surrounding and nearby countries were present to start a war against each other; a mutual signing of the declaration of war.

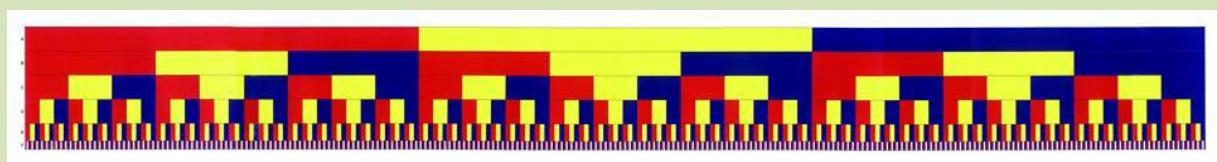
- OK. Now we are talking. Go ahead. I can type like this, no problem. So let's start with the meeting convened...



Now, do you look at their treasures first and again? Well, of course you do dear girl or boy. Like magnets for your eyes, isn't it? With that you have just proved that theory. Thank you.

## APPENDIX

*< We have some papers from the archives, lectures before and after the revolution and the establishment of Byzantium, so we, who sent you the book, include these also. It could help you understand, although except the history, most topics are covered in the main script. >*

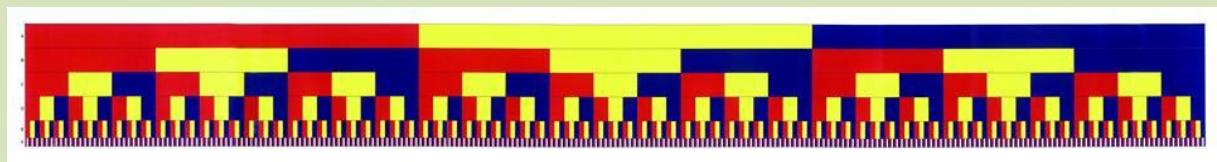


-3376

-2161

-946

270



270

1785

3000

4215

This is the fractal-structure of history. History is not something easily understood even by the historians either, surely not by the public at large. History has three thermodynamic systems working simultaneously beside each other, each influencing the others, just as we have seen in the genome-body-brain trio. That trio produced the individual life and feelings and thoughts and acts and the whole cavalcade of life. This trio here are the economic, the civilization and the cultural systems, working side by side, influencing each other and keeping the history in the state of the ***critical***. That is a state between the equilibrium and the total chaos. The physicist knows this state, so refer to their books on the subject if in trouble of understanding. This is the state where anything can happen, no need for any special and measured cause in order to cause an unmeasured great effect in response. In the history many things happened by pure chance or didn't happen even if we applied great force to it deliberately. Later I will explain. Now let's look at the fractals. The critical state always has fractals, and for the explanation look up the books on physics; the pattern repeats in greater magnitude. We have 3 equilibrium systems. Each has its own natural period as follows:

***Economy – Civilization – Culture***, or for the better handling ***p – g – n***. These symbols are from the thermodynamics, and their meaning is the same here. The p, g and n interact with each other producing the following effects, and now I just write it first and explain later.

<b><i>p – g – n</i></b>	15 years
<b><i>p – n – g</i></b>	45
<b><i>g – p – n</i></b>	135
<b><i>g – n – p</i></b>	405
<b><i>n – p – g</i></b>	1215
<b><i>n – g – p</i></b>	3645

We have three interacting systems producing 6 interactions, and these have their natural periods. The numbers are in years. 15 years is the first and 3645 is the longest. These 6 interactions are on the picture above. One whole period is 3645 years. Every period is divided to 3 parts. The reason for that is the Hegelian triad; or rather it comes from Schelling originally.

When we think in the causal, we start from the particular, which is the pure concepts within us, and we follow up with the singular, we put that in order according to the concepts, and we get to the fulfilled particular and finally the universal, or  $P_1 – S – P_2 – U$ . When we think in the teleological, the line becomes  $P_1 – U – P_2 – S$ . This is the logic of the history. (Because we understand that we always start out in and by  $P_1$ , we can leave it out, but never forget about it). We have the universal, and then we find the singular through the particular for it. We have the notion of the ideal first, or how it supposed to be, and we trying to fit the singular acts in it, explaining the singular from the viewpoint of the universal. The making of history goes completely under this thinking, so the actual history is made by the logic of the teleological, even if we are not aware of this fact. The subjective becomes objective, just as Hegel found, although he didn't know why it is happening that way. I coloured the three parts of every period: red for the universal, yellow for the singular and blue for the particular. Hegel, well, Schelling rather finally will be justified, even if not exactly the way he constructed the

Universe from logic, but logic has a meaning, a material base here. The 15 years period was created after Jose Ortega y Gasset, and it is better if you read his work on the proving that 15 years is the lifetime of the rise and glory of one generation. He was a great philosopher, and I accept his work on it. So we have the history right in front of us in the two pictures. The question is, when we start history. History started when all three systems were in place. Before that time there were happenings, acts, stories, living the life, but history is a whole different ball-game. History starts in other words when we have the Universal, or God. And that is not some common God, not the God of the unknown, the feared, the dreaded; it is not natural fear what constructed the real God. I have to explain this, because the common knowledge is filled with the teachings of the social-study-guys, and that is always wrong.

We all have the concept of the essence of life, and that is the maximum potential or the minimum entropy of the constructed system, which turns the retardation of the entropy into a new system, and this new system makes life as such understandable as life, as different from the causal chain of causes and effects. In the latter life won't appear as life, but in the newly constructed system it will. We talked about it a lot. So this notion of the zero entropy of the system of life is implanted into every living thing. This concept exists in the mind objectively. The religion committed a crime when it has imagined to real existence the concept which exists only in the mind. The difference is so big between the two kinds of existence that it turned the whole logic upside down. But it was well after history started. In the beginning the people transferred this concept, invested the concept onto a real person, who by this invested concept became the living symbol of the free energy of the people or group, because we cannot talk about nation at that time yet. This person so glorified was the first king of the Aryan people. His symbol was the Sun, and many types of symbols were invented for the Sun. So the symbol of the first Aryan king, who was invested as the guardian of the free energy of the people, was the cross in many varieties. The legends started around this impersonated free energy, the ideal free energy, the minimum entropy of the group or nation. This is the starting point of history. Later this person was glorified and identified as the result of the false logic, and God was born, but it was much later. The year is according to Dr Waddell is 3378 BC. I started the history at 3376 BC, so the years of AD can be divided by 5, but it is only for convenience. We start with a red colour. The idea was born, and the people in the red areas live their life differently than they do in other ages. In the red the universal is the determinant factor. They have the idea, and every man lives according to the expectation of the idea. We will see this later. The yellow is the area of the singular. The mind or history (it is the same here) wants to understand the universal. Everything is in the singular. The universal has no power anymore; the people live according to their individual thinking. Everyone makes his own God here. They want to understand, and that means the idea goes to the singular state, everyone thinking it himself, and the history is in turmoil in these periods. The blue means the understood model, the particular. This is the understood universal together with the singular, inserted into the universal. This is the age of the rational. The blue period means the model is the reality, and societies make their own destiny, not the universal makes it or the not-understood singular makes it, but the model as they understand reality at a given time-period. Man makes model-God in this blue period. The thinking returned to the starting point, but it is a different point, it has been understood, the empty categories have been fulfilled. This is

what we name model. Now, let's go around it a little more, because it is something very new, and it has to be understood. We started out with the hypothesis that the society is a complexity of three thermodynamic systems. We have done this in the book, and will do it later here. The three systems are working side by side, simultaneously, and interact with each other. The interaction produces 6 different possibilities.

Perfectly arbitrarily we choose the period of the first interaction to be 15 years, and we tripled every other time. We divided every period to three different phases, and we coloured those phases' red, yellow and blue. We started the history at 3376 BC. In the second period we have taken into consideration the research and the results of Heribert Illig, who ably proved that 297 years have been added to history, so the 614 – 911 AD period is missing. But because we are used to the present dating, the second period numerically is a little longer, but not in reality. I added 300 years to it, so because I started the history two years later than Dr Waddell did; now I give back that time. It won't make any difference, because the dating in history is hazy anyway.

Now we have constructed the fractal picture of history. We can see history in one. Now, we can make completely a priori predictions without knowing what happened in reality. We can predict that at the beginning the potential was there amassed, accumulated. It came from the economy, the civilization's values, and the duty of everybody for the state, which is the culture. We do not go here by the definitions given by the dictionaries or others. The concepts are new here, because we are doing something new, and the thermodynamics never been deployed in the social studies, which fact explains the backwardness of the social studies. What will happen if the potential is great? It will expand, it will do useful work. This beginning of the history must have started out with some great expansion. I cannot go through the whole history here, but you can read. It was the time of the great expansions. The Egyptian Pre-Dynastic Age lasted until 2971. At 2971 BC something new had to happen up to 2566 BC. This was the Early Dynastic Age. From 2566 to 2161 BC some very rational age can be predicted here. This was the Early Empire with the pyramids, the high culture, and the stable society. At 2161 something had to happen. This was the First Transitional age, and it was short, followed by the Middle-Empire of Egypt. As I said the yellow is the turmoil. The deeper we go into it, the bigger the turmoil will be. At the depth of the yellow was the Second transitional age, and it was the age of great upheavals everywhere in the world. We know more about the Egyptian one and it lasted about a century, 1630 – 1550. From here a new empire started, the New Empire, and lasted to 946 BC. The dating of the Egyptologists puts an end at 1075 BC, but there is no reason for it, and they date by dynasties, and there is no end to the New Empire until 946 BC. So if the will revise their findings, they arrive at the conclusion that the New Empire lasted until 946 BC. When they'll calculate the death of Psusennes III at 945 BC as the end of the era, they will be right.

We can see a red line going down from 3376 BC until 1550 BC, and a blue line going up from 1550 BC until 270 AD. This is the main line. The Universal is in the change into the understood model, and the actual happenings of history won't really change anything, rather they fit into this pattern of history. With the up-sliding of the blue line after 1550 we can see

many empires organized and fell apart very fast, compared with the red period. The Greeks have the typical early rational society, and then Rome will put a crown on that age. Rome is totally under the power of the understood universal, the very stable society as they imagined, they live by the model they created, or rather history created, or the human mind created, and it is the same meaning. Explanation of creating history by the model is in the book; the USA is doing the same today and screws up everything in the process, just like the Romans did. The world is in the period of the Pax Augusta until 270 AD. This is the time when one full period is over and another starts. By 270 the Roman model's failings show up, and a new idea is necessary for the world, or the mind, or history, all the same. 270 is the year when Rome loses battle against the Goths, and the army of Rome will never be the unmatched army again. The taxation is greater and greater, the society polarized into rich and poor, and all the stories the books of history will tell you. The main thing is that a new God will be born.

Every period starts with a new idea, and it means a new God. Before you ask, it wasn't Jesus. It was the emperor Diocletian. Confusing, isn't it? I told you this is a new thinking, and with it the whole will be understood. Diocletian came to the throne (which was not a throne at that time) at 285 AD. He forced the people to call him Dominus. The slaves called their masters dominus before, and no Roman emperor even thought about this addressing before. Diocletian persecuted the Christians. The Christians and the followers of the Mithras-cult or religion mixed and interacted for centuries, and finally about 270 something crystallized out of the ideological chaos of the early Christianity and other religions. When Diocletian was called Dominus, the people lost faith in the Roman model, and the emperor gained unlimited power. This power was identified with God, so again a living person was the material base with his unlimited secular power for the model or idea of a new God. Before this there was no monotheism. You heard me right. The Jews had a God, but they chose that God out of many. Jehovah originally was the God of thunder. Besides, the Ten Commandments start out with the prohibition of following or having or loving other Gods and it is perfectly useless if there are no other Gods available to choose from. The only monotheism in history before was the attempt of Ehnaton to place Aton as the only God in Egypt, but it didn't last for 15 years. So the first time in history a real monotheism was accepted, but immediately destroyed by the Trinity. Arius attempted the real monotheism, but the political opponents destroyed his idea, so his followers went to Persia, and there they could freely disseminate the idea of the one God, and later it became the Mohammedanism in the X century. No, not in the VII century as the history books claim it. Mohammed never existed, sorry Muslims, because the age period of 614 – 911 never existed. Mohammedanism was invented for conquering, and that is why every terrorist today use this idiocy to justify their act. It is not the religion of peace, and here doesn't matter what any imam will say. I know it is hard to adjust preconceived idiocies to the reality, but it is not my fault. The new God was the product of the contradiction of the Roman model. The group and the individual are in opposition. The extreme group-power was the Jewish nation, or group, which originally somehow got together from the criminals of their time, and formed a nation later, just as the Romans did. The difference being that the Jews never ceased to be criminals, never attempted to conform to the people they lived together with, so their persecution through the ages was justified. It was about the control of the

group versus the control of the individual beside the not-liking of the cheating and robbing of the people. The holocaust-show they put on today makes me puke; it's pure cheating, fraud.

But let's go back to the new God. The power of the group over the individual versus the power of the individual to form and dissolve any group freely, this is the question, or the two sides of the coin. The freemen of the German tribes were individuals, and that made Christianity a religion of the individuals in the West. In the East the power of the group was strong, and that is the final reason of the diversification of Christianity later. The new idea started the age of the knights, the freemen, the early Middle-Ages. In the red big block of 270 – 1785 (300 years added) the three major changes in the second line are at 975 (614 and 914 are the same point) and 1380, exactly where the historian would put the changes, and we are still in the *a priori*. In the same time the similarity with the first period is very much like sameness. If we compare the two total periods as they are one under the other, the happenings and the progress of history are almost identical. Of course the two periods are identical by definition, but I am talking about the history as happened, the facts, and the history as written down. The Egyptian history and the history of the Middle-Ages are identical if we look at the big picture, the changes of the ideas, the major things. All we care about now is the *a priori*, and we illustrate that from the examples in history as the historians telling the stories. If you read the history books, do not read the so-called Caroling-times, because it is fantasy, not history, so if you read the books, 975 and 1380 are real *a posteriori* turning points, so is 1785. Now it would be too much and for the purpose of mine useless to go into details of the actual history. But 1785 is a big turning point. This is the time when the old liberal democratic values were accepted in the minds of men, in history, it is the same. *Liberte, egalite, fraternite* was the slogan from 1785 on. Here we go into the yellow period, the knightly values are dissolved, and the money-man takes over the ideology. This is the age of the nations or nationalism. Before this date we cannot talk about nations as we understand the concept today. The more deeply we go into the yellow, the more revolutionary history becomes. We are now exactly at the point where the Egyptian Second Transitional age was. Everything is in great disorder, there is no value to follow, and the wrong type of individualism and collectivism mixed are the major force and no hope whatsoever to see the end of it. We can do two things. We can follow the *zeitgeist* and wait for something, and this is the wrong way, because it will be worse. Or we can end history by making the three thermodynamic systems to work in equilibrium, so the fractals of history disappear, because the chaos disappears, and so the critical state disappears. How to make the systems work as real systems in equilibrium is very easy.

In brief, we give up the credit-money, and we are introducing the scientific money with permanent purchasing power. It is ready, it can be done overnight, and nobody will know it has been introduced. Only the tax will go much lower. First, we prohibit the banks to use the fractional reserve system they are using today, creating and decreasing money at will, causing crises and mastering the economy, enslaving the people and unborn generations infinitely. It is a crime. The money supposed to be created by the nation, not the banker, not the politician, but the nation. After the banks are prohibited to loan non-existent money, which they create by the stroke of a pen, they have to keep the 100% of the money in the checking accounts. Many books are telling the same, so it is clear. What is not so clear is the creation of the sci-

entific money. A Bureau needs to be established for the task, like the Bureau of Weights and Measures. The people establish an index number. This is the monetary value of the necessary goods and services for one man for one month. It is different in different countries, so let's assume 4000 \$ is, what the people deem necessary. That is the monetary value of the index number, which the Bureau will name 100. The monetary value is not the concern of the Bureau, only to keep the purchasing power of the money constant at this 100. The statisticians are able to give a prognosis by following the market and the stocks in the factories if the purchasing power of the money will go up or down well before it happens. And this is the point what the reformists don't understand well enough, or just don't understand, period. Before the inflation occurs, the Bureau advises (or does itself, depend on the organization, but it is unimportant here) the annihilation of some money, so less money in circulation will not cause inflation. But this only works if the withdrawal and annihilation of some quantity of money happens *before* the price level has risen. If the price level goes up, and we withdraw money after, then the production will decrease, and the factories will close down, and joblessness occur, just as occur today. The reason is the same. Nobody will sell something cheaper than it cost him to buy. So the shortage of money caused by the banks won't push the prices down immediately, but pushes the production down first, and much later the prices. The cause of the crises of today is very well understood to anyone who knows thermodynamics, and able to think, but strangely, it is an unknown territory to the economists. So if the Bureau predicts that the price level will rise, money should be withdrawn from circulation. It can be done by ad hoc taxation and the annihilation of the money, or the sale of state-issued bonds and similarly with the annihilation of the money taken in. If the Bureau predicts the opposite, some money should be issued to circulation. This can be done by paying the employees of the state with new money, or cut back taxation, or buying back state-issued bonds. The major point is, that by the continuous checking of the market and the continuous issuing or withdrawing money the purchasing power of money can be kept constant, and the price-level also. Not the actual price-change of a given item what matters, but the market as a whole, everything a person needs for the living from the bread to the insurance. It is easy to do, there is a Bureau doing the prognosis today, but the money is not created by the Bureau, but it is created by the banks and completely independent of the needs of the production and the market. The banker is a public enemy, should be imprisoned, but they are still permitted by the traitor politicians to continue the robbing of the people. Those average-minded politicians are enemies of the people, and should be shot without mercy. They are doing exactly the opposite what they were hired to do. More importantly, they are playing with the people and the free energy of the society. To understand the changes one has to understand what money really is. It is in the book. But because of the average mind today is in a catastrophic state, and because of the average mind has to understand in order to fight against the vested interest, I repeat it again. *Money measures the virtual wealth of the society.* It does not measure the total wealth, as the quantity theory of the money claims, and it is not a commodity which measures itself, no, the money measures the free economical energy or virtual wealth of the society. So whoever is playing with it, expropriate it, he annihilates the energy of the society, and this group of people are traitors of the society. They know exactly what they are doing. They are stealing, robbing the society *en gross* with the help of the law, the police; their play-things. They are criminals, and we have to handle them likewise. The capital redemption we talked about.

Here the problem is that the debt lasts forever while the agents of production, on which the investment was made, amortise. Here the economist cannot make a difference between the loan on the money and the investment on the capital. The difference is about the same as the difference between the *reaction energy* of a chemical reaction and the *activation energy* of the same reaction. We never can get back the latter, only the former. The investment in the agents of production is like activation energy, it stays inside the producing system, never comes out as consumer goods, it can never be repaid. The dividend is not repayment, but reward for giving up the money for the capital, so cannot be measured, so we have to decide how much money is enough for rewarding those people. I say double the investment face value is about right. Without investment there would be no development, so the investor should be paid. Nonetheless, the debt cannot be infinite, because it creates a leisured class living on the fat and work of others, and it is a social perpetuum mobile, which is impossible. A 20% tax should be charged on the dividends, and the money received by the state should be used for purchasing stocks only, so slowly the agents of production would be communal property, and the dividends received on them can be used in place of the taxation for the financing of common ends, like building highways and pay for tuitions and so on. Many problems of today come from this original misunderstanding, the mixing of the two very different types of loans and not knowing logic and science. The state is permitted or should be enabled to own capital. In this system of today it isn't, but that is based on a free-market ideology, which failed many times. I am not talking about the state overtaking of the factories like the communist regime had done. The logical state will have income from the dividends, so the taxation should go lower. It will stabilize the stock-market as well, the state becoming a steady buyer of stocks, so the investments are encouraged and made safe.

The land should be placed under communal ownership, so it shall be taken out of the monetary base, meaning no debt can be issued on the title, unlike it can be done today.

The second system is the civilization, and that is a tricky system. This is the system of rights and duties. It can be made scientific by not allowing people under the IQ 90 or rather 100 to have children. Everybody before the age of fertility has to be tested for intelligence inherited, and an improved IQ-test will be required for everybody to complete before the age of fertility. Those who cannot pass it above the value set by a scientific body, but let's name the value 100, will be denied the right to bear or beget offspring. He and she permanently have to be made unable by operation to pass the inferior genes to the next generations. They still can have sex. The meek shall not inherit the Earth. The smart and genetically bright shall inherit the Earth. This is the order of Nature. We have to construct the frame-work accordingly. Scientific society needs bright, thinking, smart mankind.

That is all. Sound strange, but it is very easily can be done and understood. Humankind is more and more stupid. The stupidest have more children than the smart people. It is in the book, and there it was done in a more useful way and shorter time by eliminating the people who carry the genes unfit for science and advance. The IQ test is very clear. The blacks are inferior. Leave them alone, and they can't do any production, they go back to the stone-age. The white people need to educate them, but who educated the white people? Good question. The Chinese and other Asians are similarly doing all right left alone, except for the individualism, and so very cruel, brutal with the animals and with each other, and will do the same to

the white men if and when they could do it. They would erase western culture for sure, and would make the Earth uninhabitable for the thinking men and for every man finally. If we want the western culture, or whatever is left from it to stand, we have to kill its enemies first, because if they will have a chance they surely will kill us. This coming age is the age of the war of cultures. But that is the cultural system, so the IQ- testing and permission to have children will take care of both system-problems. The people with low IQ must be neutered. They can have sex, but unable to have children. Or we can continue the production of human rubbish, and overpopulation will kill everybody. The book describes the right process. If you do not understand it, it is your problem; your head should be examined thoroughly. If you are unable or don't want to understand it, you are among the rubbish. You are then the slogan-man, the un-thinker peacock, and you are the past; no need for you in the future.

There is one more thing we have to talk about, and that is the *politics*. Politics cannot be handled like the thermodynamic systems. Politics is not a thermodynamic system, because it uses the whole energy, not only the free energy. Every politician has the backing of the whole country as it could be mobilized and sent to war immediately. Without this, he wouldn't be able to negotiate. The politics is using the whole energy, because it is the duty of every citizen of the country to fight and die if necessary in case of war. Every country always acts like it wanted more power. The essence of the politics is power. Power gained is the goal of every kind of politics, and it really doesn't matter what the politician says. Today the gaining of the power goes under the name of propagation or dissemination or introduction of the democracy. It is false, it is lying, and it is for the people who cannot think for themselves. The expansion of America under the name of democracy is laughable, and I would laugh if there would be some value behind it. There is only negative value behind it. The politicians don't even know what the meaning of the word *democracy* is, but it is a great word to repeat over and over again even if applied for completely conflicting situations. Every country now is democratic which is at the side of America, or rather at the side of Israel. Saudi-Arabia is a democracy and Russia under Stalin was a democracy while at the side of America during the Word War II. Every country opposes America in the gaining of power is anti-democratic and must be demolished. It is not tolerated in the democracy to discuss democracy itself. It is enough if I am a racist or anti-democratic that anything I am saying declared false, no need to read actually one line, because if the writer of it is stigmatized by those magic words, he is automatically false, even if he says the snow is white. For complete idiots, brainwashed stupid liberal democrats, leftish Marxist and Jews, this stigmatizing, name-calling means the critic of a theory today. They don't bother to read and comprehend the actual words, the contents; they just want every theory being conformed to their idiotic and criminal activities and mind. The thinking men cannot be deceived by them. So if you are among those former, you wouldn't believe the monetary system needs a reform, just because I wrote so-called racist sentences elsewhere. Too bad, you are brainwashed slogan-repeater little nothing, mankind will be better without you. If you are among the latter, you are welcome in the real world of thinking humans. Read and reread, and if you have a question just ask. Yeah, I am ready to debate with real thinkers only.

Maybe you are shocked that I excluded the male from the society of the future. If you think without prejudice, you will arrive to the same conclusion. The Y chromosome is hiding from the X. Every word in this book has a scientific fact behind it. Richard Dawkins explained it well. Read him. But completely independent of this fact, if you thinking about history, you will see that all the wars were caused by males (or a female acting as males, but it is a different story). All the stupid theories were produced by males. The girls don't need theories to live the life. The Spartans never needed theories; only those who are unsure need theories. The girls behave completely different when alone. They don't accept the liberal democracy, only if they are competing with men. When they get an office, they become bureaucrats, and they start repeating the politically correct phrases. But when they choose from the men to have donors for their child, they doing exactly the opposite what the equality teaches. They select. So the female is a born anti-democrat, an anti-liberal if they are left alone. The males of the animals are killed off by nature, and they are good as donors only for the next generation. Many never have sex in their life, because they are just not good enough for the replication of their genes. The males are disposable and disposed by nature in great numbers. Only we think in and about two genders, because we are used to thinking in the two-sex society. It is customary, but it is illogical today. Long time ago it could have been logical, but the environment has changed since the age of the savannah. Today, if the economy institutes the scientific order, no need for the marriage, no need for the two-parent family. The moral of today says differently, but we just throw that customary thinking to the trash and start with the logic of philosophy. Girls are born bisexuals, even if they say differently. So it would take too much space and energy, but thinking it ad absurdum, you can arrive at the same conclusion. The self-contradiction of the society comes from the two sexes, the different thinking of the two sexes, the different programmes they carry within. So the best thing would be to eliminate one. The girls' body being the aesthetical first, and because they are the better sex, being healthier, not having testosterone to induce the urge to fight as males have, and because they enjoy each other naturally, they are the real chosen people. I could put here many studies about the sexual behaviour of the girls when left alone and free to have sex, and all those studies show that I am right. So read the studies instead of refute me on the stupid prejudice. Take only one example. They showed porno-movies to girls. The hetero girls liked the lesbian porno more than the straight porno, and when watching straight porno, they always watched the girls, empathized with and moved by their pleasure and aroused by the orgasm of the girls, not by the men's. Girls always masturbate better by watching girls masturbating or having lesbo sex. They are cooperating, loving when left alone. None likes to watch gay man

having sex. It's awful, they make me puke, and they are defects of nature, trash. Sorry, gays.

I have talked to many girls about it, between girls it is an open debate, and all of them said that it is the partner only, not the gender of the partner what really matters to have sex with her or him. Many



bisexual girls told me they can get any hetero girl to bed, it just depends on the liking of each other, and it must be true, because in the porno industry self-admittedly hetero girls enjoy the role of the lesbian. Every girl likes their pussy eaten properly, and doesn't matter by which sex, but it was only an answer for a questionnaire; they like their girlfriends' tongue better and I know that for sure. Girls love to have bi-girls for girlfriend; that way they can be real good friends. The girlfriend is always there to help them when in need and vice versa. So don't be surprised but be happy when you go into the room of your daughter and see something like the picture. It is perfectly natural, and it means your girlie is perfectly normal and in good hands or tongues and in excellent health. Boys make her bad anyway. The real joy is something like this, well, much better without clothes, but this isn't a pornographic book. A quickie makes girl feel better. It never fails to make her happier and more optimistic. It feels very good, it's a natural need, so don't be shy, girls' business is going on every day anyway.

We have to get the facts first, and then make the model. Don't you ever commit the crime of making up a model after the politically correct idiocies and trying to form the world to follow and conform to that stupid model; it is explained in the book. In today's world this is the case, and the model-makers have a purpose in mind while they feed you with the meaningless liberal democratic ideas. They want you as their slave. But they don't believe in those ideas of theirs; it has been made for you, to subjugate you. Look at Israel, and you will be enlightened. Israel doesn't follow the liberal ideas, and with that Israel is right, but poisoning the world with it thorough its agent provocateurs, paid by the monetary power, keeping the stupid monetary system in place still. These are the monkey-like Marxist professors of the universities, and the leaders of the leftish political parties, and so on. Most elected leaders are just plain idiots; they don't even know where the library is.

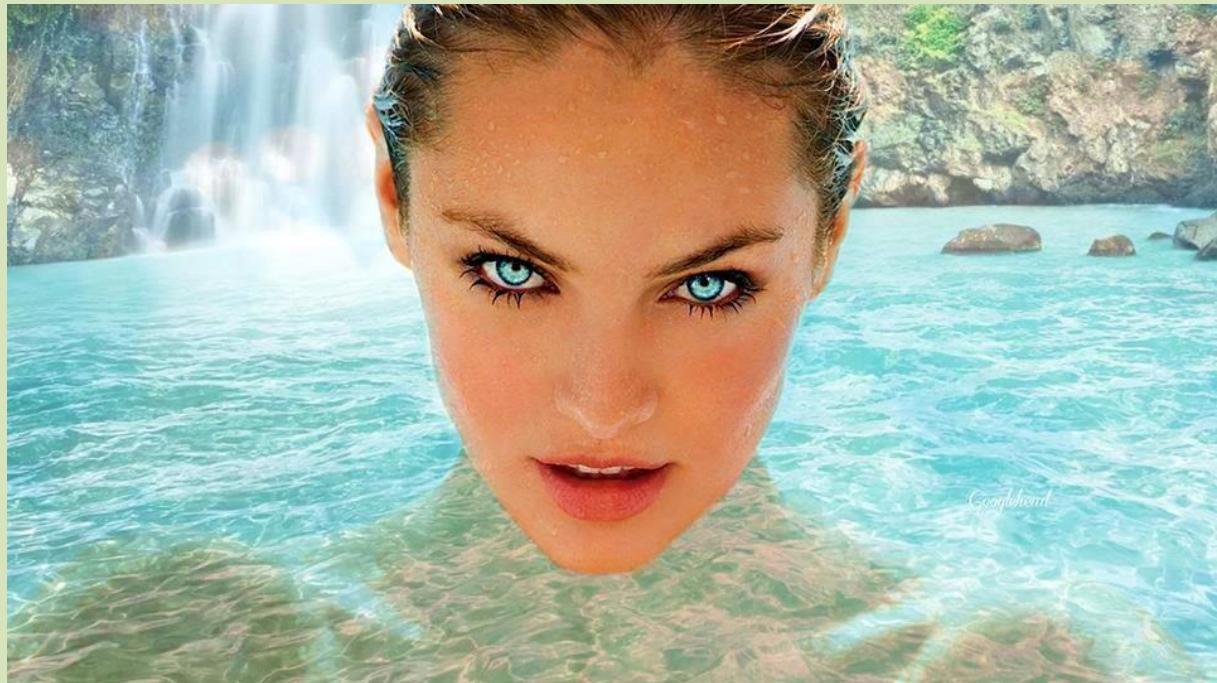
Am I sexist? Of course I am. Nature is sexist too, so you may ignore nature as well, if you are one of those who like to stigmatize everything with an “-ism” without and instead of thinking. It is easier, but never takes us anywhere. Yes, I am a sexist, a racist, an anti-Semite, anti-democratic, and whatever labels you have, you can hang on me, little idiot. Those are empty words without meaning for me. But I am still right, I have the only true solution, and you have nothing, except empty labels. I just follow through logically and scientifically the newest results, and I am sure about being right. Philosophy isn't what you learn today in the brainwashing places called schools. The political correctness of today is anti-philosophical. Philosophy is thinking without prejudice, may it take us anywhere, we follow the truth and only the truth. Grow up. Never be afraid to say what is proven true. Never be afraid to say what has not been proven true yet, so we can have a great debate. The future seems impossible looking at it from the state of affairs today. Either we act now, or we'll never be able to do anything later. The critical state of the history will have its way; many more people will perish in an unorganized revolution or in a war of cultures. Too bad, the wrong type will die again, and the lowliest, the meek will inherit the Earth if we let it happen. So give up the idiotic moral views of today and act with us. Have a voice, have a gun, and the real future, the sub specie aeternitatis society, can be constructed one way or another. I give here one way, the only defendable way. Nothing else can be the final solution; nothing other than a final solution worth fighting for; if you have the perfection before you, you're obligated to fight

for it as member of humanity, it is your duty to fight. The end sanctifies the means. Now real leaders and real revolutionaries are needed to carry out the theory. Practice is next. So very soon I have to get up, get a gun and show you the way. The talking-time is way over.

*<Well, we hope you find this writing illuminating. The fact that we have time-transferred it back to one person, could change history if she writes it down. We are real all right, our society exists and thriving, but we could become a possibility from your stand-point by this time-transfer. We hope you can follow the logical line of it. You can decide to kill the leaders of the revolution back there before anything could happen. You also can realize the fact that there is no other way to construct perfection and help them. It is of course your decision, but the outcome finally is the same one way or another. The particular way the perfection manifest itself is secondary. Can happen other ways, but there is no way to circumvent it without the death of all, the detriment of society. Greetings from the year 850 AB.>*

**Well, that was all, I guess, so we have the vision, the ideology and the means. We better start creating this Paradise soon.**

I am the enchantress of the lake my dear girls darlings, and I give you the Excalibur.



Yes, my dear, your time will come one way or another, but surely you are the future, and for that great future you have to fight. Nothing else matters, only the result matters.

